

# samuel beckett

THE  
COLLECTED  
SHORTER  
PLAYS



## Collected Shorter Plays

## Works by Samuel Beckett published by Grove Press

<i>Cascando</i>	<i>Mercier and Camier</i>
<i>Collected Poems in English and French</i>	<i>Molloy</i>
<i>The Collected Shorter Plays of Samuel Beckett</i>	<i>More Pricks Than Kicks</i>
<i>Company</i>	<i>Murphy</i>
<i>Disjecta</i>	<i>Nohow On (Company, Ill Seen Ill Said, Worstward Ho)</i>
<i>Endgame</i>	<i>Ohio Impromptu</i>
<i>Ends and Odds</i>	<i>Proust</i>
<i>First Love and Other Stories</i>	<i>Rockaby</i>
<i>Happy Days</i>	<i>Stories and Texts for Nothing</i>
<i>How It Is</i>	<i>Three Novels</i>
<i>I Can't Go On, I'll Go On</i>	<i>Waiting for Godot</i>
<i>Krapp's Last Tape</i>	<i>Watt</i>
<i>The Lost Ones</i>	<i>Worstward Ho</i>
<i>Malone Dies</i>	

*Happy Days: Samuel Beckett's Production Notebooks,*  
edited by James Knowlson

*Samuel Beckett: The Complete Short Prose, 1929–1989,*  
edited and with an introduction and notes by  
S. E. Gontarski

*The Theatrical Notebooks of Samuel Beckett: Endgame,*  
edited by S. E. Gontarski

*The Theatrical Notebooks of Samuel Beckett:*  
*Krapp's Last Tape,* edited by James Knowlson

*The Theatrical Notebooks of Samuel Beckett: Waiting for  
Godot,* edited by Dougald McMillan and James Knowlson

# **COLLECTED SHORTER PLAYS**

**SAMUEL BECKETT**



Grove Press  
New York

Copyright © 1984 by Samuel Beckett

All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form, by any means, including mechanical, electronic, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Grove Press  
841 Broadway  
New York, NY 10003

*All That Fall* © Samuel Beckett, 1957; *Act Without Words I* © Samuel Beckett, 1959; *Act Without Words II* © Samuel Beckett, 1959; *Krapp's Last Tape* © Samuel Beckett, 1958; *Rough for Theatre I* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Rough for Theatre II* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Embers* © Samuel Beckett, 1959; *Rough for Radio I* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Rough for Radio II* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Words and Music* © Samuel Beckett, 1962; *Cascando* © Samuel Beckett, 1963; *Play* © Samuel Beckett, 1963; *Film* © Samuel Beckett, 1967; *The Old Tune*, adapt. © Samuel Beckett, 1963; *Come and Go* © Samuel Beckett, 1966; *Eb Joe* © Samuel Beckett, 1967; *Breath* © Samuel Beckett, 1970; *Not I* © Samuel Beckett, 1973; *That Time* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Footfalls* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; *Ghost Trio* © Samuel Beckett, 1976; . . . *but the clouds*. . . © Samuel Beckett, 1977; *A Piece of Monologue* © Samuel Beckett, 1982; *Rockaby* © Samuel Beckett, 1982; *Ohio Impromptu* © Samuel Beckett, 1982; *Quad* © Samuel Beckett, 1984; *Catastrophe* © Samuel Beckett, 1984; *Nacht und Traume* © Samuel Beckett, 1984; *What Where* © Samuel Beckett, 1984.

The publishers acknowledge with gratitude the permission of John Calder (Publishers) Ltd. to include in this volume *The Old Tune*, an adaptation by Samuel Beckett of *La Manivelle* by Robert Pinget, first published by Editions de Minuit, Paris, and published by John Calder (Publishers) Ltd. in 1963.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 83-49371

ISBN-0-8021-5505-1

Manufactured in the United States of America

First Grove Press Edition 1984

First Evergreen Edition 1984

# Contents

All That Fall	9
Act Without Words I	41
Act Without Words II	47
Krapp's Last Tape	53
Rough for Theatre I	65
Rough for Theatre II	75
Embers	91
Rough for Radio I	105
Rough for Radio II	113
Words and Music	125
Cascando	135
Play	145
Film	161
The Old Tune	175
Come and Go	191
Eh Joe	199
Breath	209
Not I	213
That Time	225
Footfalls	237
Ghost Trio	245
...but the clouds...	255
A Piece of Monologue	263
Rockaby	271
Ohio Impromptu	283
Quad	289
Catastrophe	295
Nacht und Träume	303
What Where	307



# All That Fall

A play for radio



**Written in English in July–September 1956. First published by Grove Press, New York, in 1957. First broadcast by the BBC Third Programme on 13 January 1957.**

## CAST

MRS ROONEY (Maddy)	a lady in her seventies
CHRISTY	a carter
MR TYLER	a retired bill-broker
MR SLOCUM	Clerk of the Racecourse
TOMMY	a porter
MR BARRELL	a station-master
MISS FITT	a lady in her thirties
A FEMALE VOICE	
DOLLY	a small girl
MR ROONEY (Dan)	husband of Mrs Rooney, blind
JERRY	a small boy

*Rural sounds. Sheep, bird, cow, cock, severally, then together. Silence.*

MRS ROONEY *advances along country road towards railway station. Sound of her dragging feet.*

*Music faint from house by way. "Death and the Maiden."*  
*The steps slow down, stop.*

MRS ROONEY: Poor woman. All alone in that ruinous old house. [*Music louder. Silence but for music playing. The steps resume. Music dies. MRS ROONEY murmurs, melody. Her murmur dies.*

*Sound of approaching cartwheels. The cart stops. The steps slow down, stop.]*

Is that you, Christy?

CHRISTY: It is, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: I thought the hinny was familiar. How is your poor wife?

CHRISTY: No better, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: Your daughter then?

CHRISTY: No worse, Ma'am.

[*Silence.*]

MRS ROONEY: Why do you halt? [*Pause.*] But why do I halt?

[*Silence.*]

CHRISTY: Nice day for the races, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: No doubt it is. [*Pause.*] But will it hold up?

[*Pause. With emotion.*] Will it hold up?

[*Silence.*]

CHRISTY: I suppose you wouldn't—

MRS ROONEY: Hist! [*Pause.*] Surely to goodness that cannot be the up mail I hear already.

[*Silence. The hinny neighs. Silence.*]

CHRISTY: Damn the mail.

MRS ROONEY: Oh thank God for that! I could have sworn I

heard it, thundering up the track in the far distance.

[*Pause.*] So hinnies whinny. Well, it is not surprising.

CHRISTY: I suppose you wouldn't be in need of a small load of dung?

MRS ROONEY: Dung? What class of dung?

CHRISTY: Stydung.

MRS ROONEY: Stydung. . . I like your frankness, Christy.

[*Pause.*] I'll ask the master. [*Pause.*] Christy.

CHRISTY: Yes, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: Do you find anything . . . bizarre about my way of speaking? [*Pause.*] I do not mean the voice. [*Pause.*]

No, I mean the words. [*Pause. More to herself.*] I use none but the simplest words, I hope, and yet I sometimes find my way of speaking very . . . bizarre. [*Pause.*] Mercy! What was that?

CHRISTY: Never mind her, Ma'am, she's very fresh in herself today.

[*Silence.*]

MRS ROONEY: Dung? What would we want with dung, at our time of life? [*Pause.*] Why are you on your feet down on the road? Why do you not climb up on the crest of your manure and let yourself be carried along? Is it that you have no head for heights?

[*Silence.*]

CHRISTY: [*To the binny.*] Yep! [*Pause. Louder.*] Yep wiyya to hell owwa that!

[*Silence.*]

MRS ROONEY: She does not move a muscle. [*Pause.*] I too should be getting along, if I do not wish to arrive late at the station. [*Pause.*] But a moment ago she neighed and pawed the ground. And now she refuses to advance. Give her a good welt on the rump. [*Sound of welt. Pause.*] Harder! [*Sound of welt. Pause.*] Well! If someone were to do that for me I should not dally. [*Pause.*] How she gazes at me to be sure, with her great moist cleg-tormented eyes! Perhaps if I were to move on, down the road, out of her field of vision . . . [*Sound of welt.*] No, no, enough! Take her by the snaffle and pull her eyes away from me. Oh this is awful! [*She moves on. Sound of her dragging feet.*]

What have I done to deserve all this, what, what? [*Dragging feet.*] So long ago . . . . No! No! [*Dragging feet. Quotes.*] "Sigh out a something something tale of things, Done long ago and ill done." [*She balts.*] How can I go on, I cannot. Oh let me just flop down flat on the road like a big fat jelly out of a bowl and never move again! A great big slop thick with grit and dust and flies, they would have to scoop me up with a shovel. [*Pause.*] Heavens, there is that up mail again, what will become of me! [*The dragging steps resume.*] Oh I am just a hysterical old hag I know, destroyed with sorrow and pining and gentility and church-going and fat and rheumatism and childlessness. [*Pause. Brokenly.*] Minnie! Little Minnie! [*Pause.*] Love, that is all I asked, a little love, daily, twice daily, fifty years of twice daily love like a Paris horse-butcher's regular, what normal woman wants affection? A peck on the jaw at morning, near the ear, and another at evening, peck, peck, till you grow whiskers on you. There is that lovely laburnum again.

[*Dragging feet. Sound of bicycle-bell. It is old MR TYLER coming up behind her on his bicycle, on his way to the station. Squeak of brakes. He slows down and rides abreast of her.*]

MR TAYLOR: Mrs Rooney! Pardon me if I do not doff my cap, I'd fall off. Divine day for the meeting.

MRS ROONEY: Oh, Mr Tyler, you startled the life out of me stealing up behind me like that like a deer-stalker! Oh!

MR TYLER: [*Playfully.*] I rang my bell, Mrs Rooney, the moment I sighted you I started tinkling my bell, now don't you deny it.

MRS ROONEY: Your bell is one thing, Mr Tyler, and you are another. What news of your poor daughter?

MR TYLER: Fair, fair. They removed everything, you know, the whole . . . er . . . bag of tricks. Now I am grandchildless. [*Dragging feet.*]

MRS ROONEY: Gracious how you wobble! Dismount, for mercy's sake, or ride on.

MR TYLER: Perhaps if I were to lay my hand lightly on your

shoulder, Mrs Rooney, how would that be?

[*Pause.*] Would you permit that?

MRS ROONEY: No, Mr Rooney, Mr Tyler I mean, I am tired of light old hands on my shoulders and other senseless places, sick and tired of them. Heavens, here comes Connolly's van! [*She halts. Sound of motor-van. It approaches, passes with thunderous rattles, recedes.*] Are you all right, Mr Tyler? [*Pause.*] Where is he? [*Pause.*] Ah there you are! [*The dragging steps resume.*] That was a narrow squeak.

MR TYLER: I alit in the nick of time.

MRS ROONEY: It is suicide to be abroad. But what is it to be at home, Mr Tyler, what is it to be at home? A lingering dissolution. Now we are white with dust from head to foot. I beg your pardon?

MR TYLER: Nothing, Mrs Rooney, nothing, I was merely cursing, under my breath, God and man, under my breath, and the wet Saturday afternoon of my conception. My back tyre has gone down again. I pumped it hard as iron before I set out. And now I am on the rim.

MRS ROONEY: Oh what a shame!

MR TYLER: Now if it were the front I should not so much mind. But the back. The back! The chain! The oil! The grease! The hub! The brakes! The gear! No! It is too much! [*Dragging steps.*]

MRS ROONEY: Are we very late, Mr Tyler? I have not the courage to look at my watch.

MR TYLER: [*Bitterly.*] Late! I on my bicycle as I bowled along was already late. Now therefore we are doubly late, trebly, quadrupedly late. Would I had shot by you, without a word.

[*Dragging feet.*]

MRS ROONEY: Whom are you meeting, Mr Tyler?

MR TYLER: Hardy. [*Pause.*] We used to climb together. [*Pause.*] I saved his life once. [*Pause.*] I have not forgotten it. [*Dragging feet. They stop.*]

MRS ROONEY: Let us halt a moment and let this vile dust fall back upon the viler worms.

[*Silence. Rural sounds.*]

MR TYLER: What sky! What light! Ah in spite of all it is a

blessed thing to be alive in such weather, and out of hospital.

MRS ROONEY: Alive?

MR TYLER: Well half alive shall we say?

MRS ROONEY: Speak for yourself, Mr Tyler. I am not half alive nor anything approaching it. [*Pause.*] What are we standing here for? This dust will not settle in our time. And when it does some great roaring machine will come and whirl it all skyhigh again.

MR TYLER: Well, shall we be getting along in that case?

MRS ROONEY: No.

MR TYLER: Come, Mrs Rooney—

MRS ROONEY: Go, Mr Tyler, go on and leave me, listening to the cooing of the ringdoves. [*Cooing.*] If you see my poor blind Dan tell him I was on my way to meet him when it all came over me again, like a flood. Say to him, Your poor wife, She told me to tell you it all came flooding over her again and ... [*The voice breaks.*] ... she simply went back home ... straight back home ....

MR TYLER: Come, Mrs Rooney, come, the mail has not yet gone up, just take my free arm and we'll be there with time and to spare.

MRS ROONEY: [*Sobbing.*] What? What's all this now? [*Calmer.*] Can't you see I'm in trouble? [*With anger.*] Have you no respect for misery? [*Sobbing.*] Minnie! Little Minnie!

MR TYLER: Come, Mrs Rooney, come, the mail has not yet gone up, just take my free arm and we'll be there with time and to spare.

MRS ROONEY: [*Brokenly.*] In her forties now she'd be, I don't know, fifty, girding up her lovely little loins, getting ready for the change ....

MR TYLER: Come, Mrs Rooney, come, the mail—

MRS ROONEY: [*Exploding.*] Will you get along with you, Mr Rooney, Mr Tyler I mean, will you get along with you now and cease molesting me? What kind of a country is this where a woman can't weep her heart out on the highways and byways without being tormented by retired bill-brokers! [*Mr Tyler prepares to mount his bicycle.*] Heavens you're not going to ride her flat! [*Mr Tyler*

*mounts.] You'll tear your tube to ribbons! [Mr Tyler rides off. Receding sound of bumping bicycle. Silence. Cooing.] Venus birds! Billing in the woods all the long summer long. [Pause.] Oh cursed corset! If I could let it out, without indecent exposure. Mr Tyler! Mr Tyler! Come back and unlace me behind the hedge! [She laughs wildly, ceases.] What's wrong with me, what's wrong with me, never tranquil, seething out of my dirty old pelt, out of my skull, oh to be in atoms, in atoms! [Frenziedly.] ATOMS! [Silence. Cooing. Faintly.] Jesus! [Pause.] Jesus! [Sound of car coming up behind her. It slows down and draws up beside her, engine running. It is MR SLOCUM, the Clerk of the Racecourse.]*

MR SLOCUM: Is anything wrong, Mrs Rooney? You are bent all double. Have you a pain in the stomach?

*[Silence. MRS ROONEY laughs wildly. Finally.]*

MRS ROONEY: Well if it isn't my old admirer the Clerk of the Course, in his limousine.

MR SLOCUM: May I offer you a lift, Mrs Rooney? Are you going in my direction?

MRS ROONEY: I am, Mr Slocum, we all are. *[Pause.]* How is your poor mother?

MR SLOCUM: Thank you, she is fairly comfortable. We manage to keep her out of pain. That is the great thing, Mrs Rooney, is it not?

MRS ROONEY: Yes, indeed, Mr Slocum, that is the great thing, I don't know how you do it. *[Pause. She slaps her cheek violently.]* Ah these wasps!

MR SLOCUM: *[Coolly.]* May I then offer you a seat, Madam?

MRS ROONEY: *[With exaggerated enthusiasm.]* Oh that would be heavenly, Mr Slocum, just simply heavenly. *[Dubiously.]* But would I ever get in, you look very high off the ground today, these new balloon tyres I presume. *[Sound of door opening and MRS ROONEY trying to get in.]* Does this roof never come off? No? *[Efforts of MRS ROONEY.]* No . . . I'll never do it . . . you'll have to get down, Mr Slocum, and help me from the rear. *[Pause.]* What was that? *[Pause. Aggrieved.]* This is all your suggestion, Mr Slocum, not mine. Drive on, Sir, drive on.



MR SLOCUM: [*Switching off engine.*] I'm coming, Mrs Rooney, I'm coming, give me time, I'm as stiff as yourself.  
[*Sound of MR SLOCUM extracting himself from driver's seat.*]

MRS ROONEY: Stiff! Well I like that! And me heaving all over back and front. [*To herself.*] The dry old reprobate!

MR SLOCUM: [*In position behind her.*] Now, Mrs Rooney, how shall we do this?

MRS ROONEY: As if I were a bale, Mr Slocum, don't be afraid.  
[*Pause. Sounds of effort.*] That's the way! [*Effort.*]  
Lower! [*Effort.*] Wait! [*Pause.*] No, don't let go! [*Pause.*]  
Suppose I do get up, will I ever get down?

MR SLOCUM: [*Breathing hard.*] You'll get down, Mrs Rooney, you'll get down. We may not get you up, but I warrant you we'll get you down.  
[*He resumes his efforts. Sound of these.*]

MRS ROONEY: Oh! . . . Lower! . . . Don't be afraid! . . . We're past the age when . . . There! . . . Now! . . . Get your shoulder under it . . . Oh! . . . [*Giggles.*] Oh glory! . . . Up! Up! . . . Ah! . . . I'm in! [*Panting of MR SLOCUM. He slams the door. In a scream.*] My frock! You've nipped my frock! [*MR SLOCUM opens the door. MRS ROONEY frees her frock. MR SLOCUM slams the door. His violent unintelligible muttering as he walks round to the other door. Tearfully.*] My nice frock! Look what you've done to my nice frock! [*MR SLOCUM gets into his seat, slams driver's door, presses starter. The engine does not start. He releases starter.*] What will Dan say when he sees me?

MR SLOCUM: Has he then recovered his sight?

MRS ROONEY: No, I mean when he knows, what will he say when he feels the hole? [*MR SLOCUM presses starter. As before. Silence.*] What are you doing, Mr Slocum?

MR SLOCUM: Gazing straight before me, Mrs Rooney, through the windscreen, into the void.

MRS ROONEY: Start her up, I beseech you, and let us be off.  
This is awful!

MR SLOCUM: [*Dreamily.*] All morning she went like a dream and now she is dead. That is what you get for a good deed.  
[*Pause. Hopefully.*] Perhaps if I were to choke her. [*He*

does so, presses the starter. The engine roars. Roaring to make himself heard.] She was getting too much air! [He throttles down, grinds in his first gear, moves off, changes up in a grinding of gears.]

MRS ROONEY: [*In anguish.*] Mind the hen! [*Scream of brakes. Squawk of hen.*] Oh, mother, you have squashed her, drive on, drive on! [*The car accelerates. Pause.*] What a death! One minute picking happy at the dung, on the road, in the sun, with now and then a dust bath, and then—bang!—all her troubles over. [*Pause.*] All the laying and the hatching. [*Pause.*] Just one great squawk and then . . . peace. [*Pause.*] They would have slit her weasand in any case. [*Pause.*] Here we are, let me down. [*The car slows down, stops, engine running.* MR SLOCUM blows his horn. *Pause. Louder. Pause.*] What are you up to now, Mr Slocum? We are at a standstill, all danger is past and you blow your horn. Now if instead of blowing it now you had blown it at that unfortunate—  
[*Horn violently.* TOMMY the porter appears at top of station steps.]

MR SLOCUM: [*Calling.*] Will you come down, Tommy, and help this lady out, she's stuck.

[TOMMY descends the steps.]

Open the door, Tommy, and ease her out.

[TOMMY opens the door.]

TOMMY: Certainly, sir. Nice day for the races, sir. What would you fancy for—

MRS ROONEY: Don't mind me. Don't take any notice of me. I do not exist. The fact is well known.

MR SLOCUM: Do as you're asked, Tommy, for the love of God.

TOMMY: Yessir. Now, Mrs Rooney.

[*He starts pulling her out.*]

MRS ROONEY: Wait, Tommy, wait now, don't bustle me, just let me wheel round and get my feet to the ground. [*Her efforts to achieve this.*] Now.

TOMMY: [*Pulling her out.*] Mind your feather, Ma'am.

[*Sounds of effort.*] Easy now, easy.

MRS ROONEY: Wait, for God's sake, you'll have me beheaded.

TOMMY: Crouch down, Mrs Rooney, crouch down, and get your

head in the open.

MRS ROONEY: Crouch down! At my time of life! This is lunacy!

TOMMY: Press her down, sir.

[*Sounds of combined efforts.*]

MRS ROONEY: Pity!

TOMMY: Now! She's coming! Straighten up, Ma'am! There!

[*MR SLOCUM slams the door.*]

MRS ROONEY: Am I out?

[*The voice of MR BARRELL, the station-master, raised in anger.*]

MR BARRELL: Tommy! Tommy! Where the hell is he?

[*MR SLOCUM grinds in his gear.*]

TOMMY: [*Hurriedly.*] You wouldn't have something for the Ladies Plate, sir? I was given Flash Harry.

MR SLOCUM: [*Scornfully.*] Flash Harry! That carthorse!

MR BARRELL: [*At top of steps, roaring.*] Tommy! Blast your bleeding bloody— [*He sees MRS ROONEY.*] Oh, Mrs Rooney . . . [*MR SLOCUM drives away in a grinding of gears.*] Who's that crucifying his gearbox, Tommy?

TOMMY: Old Cissy Slocum.

MRS ROONEY: Cissy Slocum! That's a nice way to refer to your betters. Cissy Slocum! And you an orphan!

MR BARRELL: [*Angrily to TOMMY.*] What are you doing stravaging down here on the public road? This is no place for you at all! Nip up there on the platform now and whip out the truck! Won't the twelve thirty be on top of us before we can turn round?

TOMMY: [*Bitterly.*] And that's the thanks you get for a Christian act.

MR BARRELL: [*Violently.*] Get on with you now before I report you! [*Slow feet of TOMMY climbing steps.*] Do you want me to come down to you with the shovel? [*The feet quicken, recede, cease.*] Ah God forgive me, it's a hard life. [*Pause.*] Well, Mrs Rooney, it's nice to see you up and about again. You were laid up there a long time.

MRS ROONEY: Not long enough, Mr Barrell. [*Pause.*] Would I were still in bed, Mr Barrell. [*Pause.*] Would I were lying stretched out in my comfortable bed, Mr Barrell, just

wasting slowly, painlessly away, keeping up my strength with arrowroot and calves-foot jelly, till in the end you wouldn't see me under the blankets any more than a board. [*Pause.*] Oh no coughing or spitting or bleeding or vomiting, just drifting gently down into the higher life, and remembering, remembering . . . [*The voice breaks.*] . . . all the silly unhappiness . . . as though . . . it had never happened . . . What did I do with that handkerchief? [*Sound of handkerchief loudly applied.*] How long have you been master of this station now, Mr Barrell?

MR BARRELL: Don't ask me, Mrs Rooney, don't ask me.

MRS ROONEY: You stepped into your father's shoes, I believe, when he took them off.

MR BARRELL: Poor Pappy! [*Reverent pause.*] He didn't live long to enjoy his ease.

MRS ROONEY: I remember him clearly. A small ferrety purple-faced widower, deaf as a doornail, very testy and snappy. [*Pause.*] I suppose you'll be retiring soon yourself, Mr Barrell, and growing your roses. [*Pause.*] Did I understand you to say the twelve thirty would soon be upon us?

MR BARRELL: Those were my words.

MRS ROONEY: But according to my watch which is more or less right—or was—by the eight o'clock news the time is now coming up to twelve . . . [*Pause as she consults her watch.*] . . . thirty-six. [*Pause.*] And yet upon the other hand the up mail has not yet gone through. [*Pause.*] Or has it sped by unbeknown to me? [*Pause.*] For there was a moment there, I remember now, I was so plunged in sorrow I wouldn't have heard a steam roller go over me. [*Pause. MR BARRELL turns to go.*] Don't go, Mr Barrell! [*MR BARRELL goes. Loud.*] Mr Barrell! [*Pause. Louder.*] Mr Barrell! [*MR BARRELL comes back.*]

MR BARRELL: [*Testily.*] What is it, Mrs Rooney, I have my work to do.

[*Silence. Sound of wind.*]

MRS ROONEY: The wind is getting up. [*Pause. Wind.*] The best of the day is over. [*Pause. Wind. Dreamily.*] Soon the rain will begin to fall and go on falling, all afternoon.

[*MR BARRELL goes.*] Then at evening the clouds will part,

the setting sun will shine an instant, then sink, behind the hills. [*She realizes MR BARRELL has gone.*] Mr Barrell! Mr Barrell! [*Silence.*] I estrange them all. They come towards me, uninvited, bygones bygones, full of kindness, anxious to help . . . [*The voice breaks.*] . . . genuinely pleased . . . to see me again . . . looking so well . . . [*Handkerchief.*] A few simple words . . . from my heart . . . and I am all alone . . . once more . . . [*Handkerchief. Vehemently.*] I should not be out at all! I should never leave the grounds! [*Pause.*] Oh there is that Fitt woman, I wonder will she bow to me. [*Sound of MISS FITT approaching, humming a hymn. She starts climbing the steps.*] Miss Fitt! [*MISS FITT halts, stops humming.*] Am I then invisible, Miss Fitt? Is this cretonne so becoming to me that I merge into the masonry? [*MISS FITT descends a step.*] That is right, Miss Fitt, look closely and you will finally distinguish a once female shape.

MISS FITT: Mrs Rooney! I saw you, but I did not know you.

MRS ROONEY: Last Sunday we worshipped together. We knelt side by side at the same altar. We drank from the same chalice. Have I so changed since then?

MISS FITT: [*Shocked.*] Oh but in church, Mrs Rooney, in church I am alone with my Maker. Are not you? [*Pause.*] Why even the sexton himself, you know, when he takes up the collection, knows it is useless to pause before me. I simply do not see the plate, or bag, whatever it is they use, how could I? [*Pause.*] Why even when all is over and I go out into the sweet fresh air, why even then for the first furlong or so I stumble in a kind of daze as you might say, oblivious to my co-religionists. And they are very kind I must admit—the vast majority—very kind and understanding. They know me now and take no umbrage. There she goes, they say, there goes the dark Miss Fitt, alone with her Maker, take no notice of her. And they step down off the path to avoid my running into them. [*Pause.*] Ah yes, I am distract, very distract, even on week-days. Ask Mother, if you do not believe me. Hetty, she says, when I start eating my doily instead of the thin bread and butter, Hetty, how can you be so distract? [*Sighs.*] I suppose the

truth is I am not there, Mrs Rooney, just not really there at all. I see, hear, smell, and so on, I go through the usual motions, but my heart is not in it, Mrs Rooney, my heart is in none of it. Left to myself, with no one to check me, I would soon be flown . . . home. [*Pause.*] So if you think I cut you just now, Mrs Rooney, you do me an injustice. All I saw was a big pale blur, just another big pale blur. [*Pause.*] Is anything amiss, Mrs Rooney, you do not look normal somehow. So bowed and bent.

MRS ROONEY: [*Ruefully.*] Maddy Rooney, née Dunne, the big pale blur. [*Pause.*] You have piercing sight, Miss Fitt, if you only knew it, literally piercing. [*Pause.*]

MISS FITT: Well . . . is there anything I can do, now that I am here?

MRS ROONEY: If you would help me up the face of this cliff, Miss Fitt, I have little doubt your Maker would requite you, if no one else.

MISS FITT: Now, now, Mrs Rooney, don't put your teeth in me. Requite! I make these sacrifices for nothing—or not at all. [*Pause. Sound of her descending steps.*] I take it you want to lean on me, Mrs Rooney.

MRS ROONEY: I asked Mr Barrell to give me his arm, just give me his arm. [*Pause.*] He turned on his heel and strode away.

MISS FITT: Is it my arm you want then? [*Pause. Impatiently.*] Is it my arm you want, Mrs Rooney, or what is it?

MRS ROONEY: [*Exploding.*] Your arm! Any arm! A helping hand! For five seconds! Christ what a planet!

MISS FITT: Really . . . . Do you know what it is, Mrs Rooney, I do not think it is wise of you to be going about at all.

MRS ROONEY: [*Violently.*] Come down here, Miss Fitt, and give me your arm, before I scream down the parish! [*Pause. Wind. Sound of MISS FITT descending last steps.*]

MISS FITT: [*Resignedly.*] Well, I suppose it is the Protestant thing to do.

MRS ROONEY: Pismires do it for one another. [*Pause.*] I have seen slugs do it. [*MISS FITT proffers her arm.*] No, the other side, my dear, if it's all the same to you, I'm left-handed on top of everything else. [*She takes MISS FITT's*

*right arm.*] Heavens, child, you're just a bag of bones, you need building up. [*Sound of her toiling up steps on MISS FITT's arm.*] This is worse than the Matterhorn, were you ever up the Matterhorn, Miss Fitt, great honeymoon resort. [*Sound of toiling.*] Why don't they have a handrail? [*Panting.*] Wait till I get some air. [*Pause.*] Don't let me go! [*MISS FITT hums her hymn. After a moment MRS ROONEY joins in with the words.*] . . . the encircling gloo-oom . . .

[*MISS FITT stops humming.*] . . . tum tum me on. [*Forte.*]

The night is dark and I am far from ho-ome, tum tum—

MISS FITT: [*Hysterically.*] Stop it, Mrs Rooney, stop it, or I'll drop you!

MRS ROONEY: Wasn't it that they sung on the *Lusitania*? Or Rock of Ages? Most touching it must have been. Or was it the *Titanic*?

[*Attracted by the noise a group, including MR TYLER, MR BARRELL and TOMMY, gathers at top of steps.*]

MR BARRELL: What the—  
[*Silence.*]

MR TYLER: Lovely day for the fixture.

[*Loud titter from TOMMY cut short by MR BARRELL with backhanded blow in the stomach. Appropriate noise from TOMMY.*]

A FEMALE VOICE: [*Shrill.*] Oh look, Dolly, look!

DOLLY: What, Mamma?

A FEMALE VOICE: They are stuck! [*Cackling laugh.*] They are stuck!

MRS ROONEY: Now we are the laughing-stock of the twenty-six counties. Or is it thirty-six?

MR TYLER: That is a nice way to treat your defenceless subordinates, Mr Barrell, hitting them without warning in the pit of the stomach.

MISS FITT: Has anyone seen my mother?

MR BARRELL: Who is that?

TOMMY: The dark Miss Fitt.

MR BARRELL: Where is her face?

MRS ROONEY: Now, deary, I am ready if you are. [*They toil up remaining steps.*] Stand back, you cads! [*Shuffle of feet.*]

A FEMALE VOICE: Mind yourself, Dolly!

MRS ROONEY: Thank you, Miss Fitt, thank you, that will do, just prop me up against the wall like a roll of tarpaulin and that will be all, for the moment. [*Pause.*] I am sorry for all this ramdam, Miss Fitt, had I known you were looking for your mother I should not have importuned you, I know what it is.

MISS FITT: [*In marvelling aside.*] Ramdam!

A FEMALE VOICE: Come, Dolly darling, let us take up our stand before the first class smokers. Give me your hand and hold me tight, one can be sucked under.

MR TYLER: You have lost your mother, Miss Fitt?

MISS FITT: Good morning, Mr Tyler.

MR TYLER: Good morning, Miss Fitt.

MR BARRELL: Good morning, Miss Fitt.

MISS FITT: Good morning, Mr Barrell.

MR TYLER: You have lost your mother, Miss Fitt?

MISS FITT: She said she would be on the last train.

MRS ROONEY: Do not imagine, because I am silent, that I am not present, and alive, to all that is going on.

MR TYLER: [*To MISS FITT.*] When you say the last train—

MRS ROONEY: Do not flatter yourselves for one moment, because I hold aloof, that my sufferings have ceased. No. The entire scene, the hills, the plain, the racecourse with its miles and miles of white rails and three red stands, the pretty little wayside station, even you yourselves, yes, I mean it, and over all the clouding blue, I see it all, I stand here and see it all with eyes . . . [*The voice breaks.*] . . . through eyes . . . oh if you had my eyes . . . you would understand . . . the things they have seen . . . and not looked away . . . this is nothing . . . nothing . . . what did I do with that handkerchief? [*Pause.*]

MR TYLER: [*To MISS FITT.*] When you say the last train— [*MRS ROONEY blows her nose violently and long.*] —when you say the last train, Miss Fitt, I take it you mean the twelve thirty.

MISS FITT: What else could I mean, Mr Tyler, what else could I conceivably mean?

MR TYLER: Then you have no cause for anxiety, Miss Fitt, for the twelve thirty has not yet arrived. Look. [*MISS FITT*



*looks.*] No, up the line. [*MISS FITT looks. Patiently.*] No, Miss Fitt, follow the direction of my index. [*MISS FITT looks.*] There. You see now. The signal. At the bawdy hour of nine. [*In rueful afterthought.*] Or three alas! [*MR BARRELL stifles a guffaw.*] Thank you, Mr Barrell.

MISS FITT: But the time is now getting on for—

MR TYLER: [*Patiently.*] We all know, Miss Fitt, we all know only too well what the time is now getting on for, and yet the cruel fact remains that the twelve thirty has not yet arrived.

MISS FITT: Not an accident, I trust! [*Pause.*] Do not tell me she has left the track! [*Pause.*] Oh darling mother! With the fresh sole for lunch!

[*Loud titter from TOMMY, checked as before by MR BARRELL.*]

MR BARRELL: That's enough old guff out of you. Nip up to the box now and see has Mr Case anything for me.  
[*TOMMY goes.*]

MRS ROONEY: Poor Dan!

MISS FITT: [*In anguish.*] What terrible thing has happened?

MR TYLER: Now now, Miss Fitt, do not—

MRS ROONEY: [*With vehement sadness.*] Poor Dan!

MR TYLER: Now now, Miss Fitt, do not give way . . . to despair, all will come right . . . in the end. [*Aside to MR BARRELL.*] What is the situation, Mr Barrell? Not a collision surely?

MRS ROONEY: [*Enthusiastically.*] A collision! Oh that would be wonderful!

MISS FITT: [*Horried.*] A collision! I knew it!

MR TYLER: Come, Miss Fitt, let us move a little up the platform.

MRS ROONEY: Yes, let us all do that. [*Pause.*] No? [*Pause.*]

You have changed your mind? [*Pause.*] I quite agree, we are better here, in the shadow of the waiting-room.

MR BARRELL: Excuse me a moment.

MRS ROONEY: Before you slink away, Mr Barrell, please, a statement of some kind, I insist. Even the slowest train on this brief line is not ten minutes and more behind its scheduled time without good cause, one imagines. [*Pause.*] We all know your station is the best kept of the entire net-

work, but there are times when that is not enough, just not enough. *[Pause.]* Now, Mr Barrell, leave off chewing your whiskers, we are waiting to hear from you—we the unfortunate ticket-holders' nearest if not dearest.

*[Pause.]*

MR TYLER: *[Reasonably.]* I do think we are owed some kind of explanation, Mr Barrell, if only to set our minds at rest.

MR BARRELL: I know nothing. All I know is there has been a hitch. All traffic is retarded.

MRS ROONEY: *[Derisively.]* Retarded! A hitch! Ah these celibates! Here we are eating our hearts out with anxiety for our loved ones and he calls that a hitch! Those of us like myself with heart and kidney trouble may collapse at any moment and he calls that a hitch! In our ovens the Saturday roast is burning to a shrivel and he calls that—

MR TYLER: Here comes Tommy, running! I am glad I have been spared to see this.

TOMMY: *[Excitedly, in the distance.]* She's coming. *[Pause. Nearer.]* She's at the level-crossing!

*[Immediately exaggerated station sounds. Falling signals. Bells. Whistles. Crescendo of train whistle approaching. Sound of train rushing through station.]*

MRS ROONEY: *[Above rush of train.]* The up mail! The up mail! *[The up mail recedes, the down train approaches, enters the station, pulls up with great hissing of steam and clashing of couplings. Noise of passengers descending, doors banging, MR BARRELL shouting "Boghill! Boghill!", etc. Piercingly.]*

Dan! ... Are you all right? ... Where is he? ... Dan! ... Did you see my husband? ... Dan! ... *[Noise of station emptying. Guard's whistle. Train departing, receding. Silence.]* He isn't on it! The misery I have endured to get here, and he isn't on it! ... Mr Barrell! ... Was he not on it? *[Pause.]* Is anything the matter, you look as if you had seen a ghost. *[Pause.]* Tommy! ... Did you see the master?

TOMMY: He'll be along, Ma'am, Jerry is minding him.

*[MR ROONEY suddenly appears on platform, advancing on small boy JERRY's arm. He is blind, thumps the ground with his stick and pants incessantly.]*

MRS ROONEY: Oh, Dan! There you are! *[Her dragging feet as she*

*hastens towards him. She reaches him. They halt.]* Where in the world were you?

MR ROONEY: [*Coolly.*] Maddy.

MRS ROONEY: Where were you all this time?

MR ROONEY: In the men's.

MRS ROONEY: Kiss me!

MR ROONEY: Kiss you? In public? On the platform? Before the boy? Have you taken leave of your senses?

MRS ROONEY: Jerry wouldn't mind. Would you, Jerry?

JERRY: No, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: How is your poor father?

JERRY: They took him away, Ma'am.

MRS ROONEY: Then you are all alone?

JERRY: Yes, Ma'am.

MR ROONEY: Why are you here? You did not notify me.

MRS ROONEY: I wanted to give you a surprise. For your birthday.

MR ROONEY: My birthday?

MRS ROONEY: Don't you remember? I wished you your happy returns in the bathroom.

MR ROONEY: I did not hear you.

MRS ROONEY: But I gave you a tie! You have it on!

[*Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: How old am I now?

MRS ROONEY: Now never mind about that. Come.

MR ROONEY: Why did you not cancel the boy? Now we shall have to give him a penny.

MRS ROONEY: [*Miserably.*] I forgot! I had such a time getting here! Such horrid nasty people! [*Pause. Pleading.*] Be nice to me, Dan, be nice to me today!

MR ROONEY: Give the boy a penny.

MRS ROONEY: Here are two halfpennies, Jerry. Run along now and buy yourself a nice gobstopper.

JERRY: Yes, Ma'am.

MR ROONEY: Come for me on Monday, if I am still alive.

JERRY: Yessir.

[*He runs off.*]

MR ROONEY: We could have saved sixpence. We have saved fivepence. [*Pause.*] But at what cost?

[*They move off along platform arm in arm. Dragging feet,*

*panting, thudding stick.]*

MRS ROONEY: Are you not well?

*[They halt, on MR ROONEY's initiative.]*

MR ROONEY: Once and for all, do not ask me to speak and move at the same time. I shall not say this in this life again.

*[They move off. Dragging feet, etc. They halt at top of steps.]*

MRS ROONEY: Are you not—

MR ROONEY: Let us get this precipice over.

MRS ROONEY: Put your arm around me.

MR ROONEY: Have you been drinking again? *[Pause.]* You are quivering like a blancmange. *[Pause.]* Are you in a condition to lead me? *[Pause.]* We shall fall into the ditch.

MRS ROONEY: Oh, Dan! It will be like old times!

MR ROONEY: Pull yourself together or I shall send Tommy for the cab. Then instead of having saved sixpence, no, fivepence, we shall have lost . . . *[Calculating mumble.]* . . . two and three less six one and no plus one one and no plus three one and nine and one ten and three two and one . . . *[Normal voice.]* two and one, we shall be the poorer to the tune of two and one. *[Pause.]* Curse that sun, it has gone in. What is the day doing?  
*[Wind.]*

MRS ROONEY: Shrouding, shrouding, the best of it is past.

*[Pause.]* Soon the first great drops will fall splashing in the dust.

MR ROONEY: And yet the glass was firm. *[Pause.]* Let us hasten home and sit before the fire. We shall draw the blinds. You will read to me. I think Effie is going to commit adultery with the Major. *[Brief drag of feet.]* Wait! *[Feet cease. Stick tapping at steps.]* I have been up and down these steps five thousand times and still I do not know how many there are. When I think there are six there are four or five or seven or eight and when I remember there are five there three or four or six or seven and when finally I realize there are seven there are five or six or eight or nine. Sometimes I wonder if they do not change them in the night. *[Pause. Irritably.]* Well? How many do you make them today?

MRS ROONEY: Do not ask me to count, Dan, not now.

MR ROONEY: Not count! One of the few satisfactions in life!

MRS ROONEY: Not steps, Dan, please, I always get them wrong.

Then you might fall on your wound and I would have that on my manure-heap on top of everything else. No, just cling to me and all will be well.

[*Confused noise of their descent. Panting, stumbling, ejaculations, curses. Silence.*]

MR ROONEY: Well! That is what you call well!

MRS ROONEY: We are down. And little the worse. [*Silence. A donkey brays. Silence.*] That was a true donkey. Its father and mother were donkeys.

[*Silence.*]

MR ROONEY: Do you know what it is, I think I shall retire.

MRS ROONEY: [*Appalled.*] Retire! And live at home? On your grant!

MR ROONEY: Never tread these cursed steps again. Trudge this hellish road for the last time. Sit at home on the remnants of my bottom counting the hours—till the next meal.

[*Pause.*] The very thought puts life in me! Forward, before it dies!

[*They move on. Dragging feet, panting, thudding stick.*]

MRS ROONEY: Now mind, here is the path . . . Up! . . . Well done! Now we are in safety and a straight run home.

MR ROONEY: [*Without halting, between gasps.*] A straight . . . run! . . . She calls that . . . a straight . . . run! . . .

MRS ROONEY: Hush! Do not speak as you go along, you know it is not good for your coronary. [*Dragging steps, etc.*]

Just concentrate on putting one foot before the next or whatever the expression is. [*Dragging feet, etc.*] That is the way, now we are doing nicely. [*Dragging feet, etc.*]

*They suddenly halt, on MRS ROONEY's initiative.*

Heavens! I knew there was something! With all the excitement! I forgot!

MR ROONEY: [*Quietly.*] Good God!

MRS ROONEY: But you must know, Dan, of course, you were on it. Whatever happened? Tell me!

MR ROONEY: I have never known anything to happen.

MRS ROONEY: But you must—

MR ROONEY: [*Violently.*] All this stopping and starting again is devilish, devilish! I get a little way on me and begin to be carried along when suddenly you stop dead! Two hundred pounds of unhealthy fat! What possessed you to come out at all? Let go of me!

MRS ROONEY: [*In great agitation.*] No, I must know, we won't stir from here till you tell me. Fifteen minutes late! On a thirty minute run! It's unheard of!

MR ROONEY: I know nothing. Let go of me before I shake you off.

MRS ROONEY: But you must know! You were on it! Was it at the terminus? Did you leave on time? Or was it on the line? [*Pause.*] Did something happen on the line? [*Pause.*] Dan! [*Brokenly.*] Why won't you tell me! [*Silence. They move off. Dragging feet, etc. They halt. Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: Poor Maddy! [*Pause. Children's cries.*] What was that?

[*Pause for MRS ROONEY to ascertain.*]

MRS ROONEY: The Lynch twins jeering at us.  
[*Cries.*]

MR ROONEY: Will they pelt us with mud today, do you suppose?  
[*Cries.*]

MRS ROONEY: Let us turn and face them. [*Cries. They turn. Silence.*] Threaten them with your stick. [*Silence.*] They have run away.  
[*Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: Did you ever wish to kill a child? [*Pause.*] Nip some young doom in the bud. [*Pause.*] Many a time at night, in winter, on the black road home, I nearly attacked the boy. [*Pause.*] Poor Jerry! [*Pause.*] What restrained me then? [*Pause.*] Not fear of man. [*Pause.*] Shall we go on backwards now a little?

MRS ROONEY: Backwards?

MR ROONEY: Yes. Or you forwards and I backwards. The perfect pair. Like Dante's damned, with their faces arsy-versy. Our tears will water our bottoms.

MRS ROONEY: What is the matter, Dan? Are you not well?

MR ROONEY: Well! Did you ever know me to be well? The day

you met me I should have been in bed. The day you proposed to me the doctors gave me up. You knew that, did you not? The night you married me they came for me with an ambulance. You have not forgotten that, I suppose? [*Pause.*] No, I cannot be said to be well. But I am no worse. Indeed I am better than I was. The loss of my sight was a great fillip. If I could go deaf and dumb I think I might pant on to be a hundred. Or have I done so? [*Pause.*] Was I a hundred today? [*Pause.*] Am I a hundred, Maddy?  
[*Silence.*]

MRS ROONEY: All is still. No living soul in sight. There is no one to ask. The world is feeding. The wind—[*Brief wind.*]—scarcely stirs the leaves and the birds—[*Brief chirp.*]—are tired singing. The cows—[*Brief moo.*]—and sheep—[*Brief baa.*]—ruminates in silence. The dogs—[*Brief bark.*]—are hushed and the hens—[*Brief cackle.*]—sprawl torpid in the dust. We are alone. There is no one to ask.  
[*Silence.*]

MR ROONEY: [*Clearing his throat, narrative tone.*] We drew out on the tick of time, I can vouch for that. I was—

MRS ROONEY: How can you vouch for it?

MR ROONEY: [*Normal tone, angrily.*] I can vouch for it, I tell you! Do you want my relation or don't you? [*Pause.*]  
[*Narrative tone.*] On the tick of time. I had the compartment to myself, as usual. At least I hope so, for I made no attempt to restrain myself. My mind—[*Normal tone.*] But why do we not sit down somewhere? Are we afraid we should never rise again?

MRS ROONEY: Sit down on what?

MR ROONEY: On a bench, for example.

MRS ROONEY: There is no bench.

MR ROONEY: Then on a bank, let us sink down upon a bank.

MRS ROONEY: There is no bank.

MR ROONEY: Then we cannot. [*Pause.*] I dream of other roads, in other lands. Of another home, another—[*He hesitates.*]—another home. [*Pause.*] What was I trying to say?

MRS ROONEY: Something about your mind.

MR ROONEY: [*Startled.*] My mind? Are you sure? [*Pause.*]

*Incredulous.*] My mind? . . . [*Pause.*] Ah yes. [*Narrative tone.*] Alone in the compartment my mind began to work, as so often after office hours, on the way home, in the train, to the lilt of the bogeys. Your season-ticket, I said, costs you twelve pounds a year and you earn, on an average, seven and six a day, that is to say barely enough to keep you alive and twitching with the help of food, drink, tobacco and periodicals until you finally reach home and fall into bed. Add to this—or subtract from it—rent, stationery, various subscriptions, tramfares to and fro, light and heat, permits and licences, hairtrims and shaves, tips to escorts, upkeep of premises and appearances, and a thousand unspecifiable sundries, and it is clear that by lying at home in bed, day and night, winter and summer, with a change of pyjamas once a fortnight, you would add very considerably to your income. Business, I said—[*A cry. Pause. Again. Normal tone.*] Did I hear a cry?

MRS ROONEY: Mrs Tully I fancy. Her poor husband is in constant pain and beats her unmercifully.  
[*Silence.*]

MR ROONEY: That was a short knock. [*Pause.*] What was I trying to get at?

MRS ROONEY: Business.

MR ROONEY: Ah yes, business. [*Narrative tone.*] Business, old man, I said, retire from business, it has retired from you. [*Normal tone.*] One has these moments of lucidity.

MRS ROONEY: I feel very cold and weak.

MR ROONEY: [*Narrative tone.*] On the other hand, I said, there are the horrors of home life, the dusting, sweeping, airing, scrubbing, waxing, waning, washing, mangling, drying, mowing, clipping, raking, rolling, scuffling, shovelling, grinding, tearing, pounding, banging and slamming. And the brats, the happy little healthy little howling neighbours' brats. Of all this and much more the week-end, the Saturday intermission and then the day of rest, have given you some idea. But what must it be like on a working-day? A Wednesday? A Friday? What must it be like on a Friday! And I fell to thinking of my silent, backstreet, basement office, with its obliterated plate, rest-couch and velvet



hangings, and what it means to be buried there alive, if only from ten to five, with convenient to the one hand a bottle of light pale ale and to the other a long ice-cold fillet of hake. Nothing, I said, not even fully certified death, can ever take the place of that. It was then I noticed that we were at a standstill. [*Pause. Normal tone. Irritably.*] Why are you hanging out of me like that? Have you swooned away?

MRS ROONEY: I feel very cold and faint. The wind—[*Whistling wind.*—is whistling through my summer frock as if I had nothing on over my bloomers. I have had no solid food since my elevenses.

MR ROONEY: You have ceased to care. I speak—and you listen to the wind.

MRS ROONEY: No, no, I am agog, tell me all, then we shall press on and never pause, never pause, till we come safe to haven.  
[*Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: Never pause . . . safe to haven . . . . Do you know, Maddy, sometimes one would think you were struggling with a dead language.

MRS ROONEY: Yes indeed, Dan, I know full well what you mean, I often have that feeling, it is unspeakably excruciating.

MR ROONEY: I confess I have it sometimes myself, when I happen to overhear what I am saying.

MRS ROONEY: Well, you know, it will be dead in time, just like our own poor dear Gaelic, there is that to be said.  
[*Urgent baa.*]

MR ROONEY: [*Startled.*] Good God!

MRS ROONEY: Oh the pretty little woolly lamb, crying to suck its mother! Theirs has not changed, since Arcady.  
[*Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: Where was I in my composition?

MRS ROONEY: At a standstill.

MR ROONEY: Ah yes. [*Clears his throat. Narrative tone.*] I concluded naturally that we had entered a station and would soon be on our way again, and I sat on, without misgiving. Not a sound. Things are very dull today, I

said, nobody getting down, nobody getting on. Then as time flew by and nothing happened I realized my error. We had not entered a station.

MRS ROONEY: Did you not spring up and poke your head out of the window?

MR ROONEY: What good would that have done me?

MRS ROONEY: Why to call out to be told what was amiss.

MR ROONEY: I did not care what was amiss. No, I just sat on, saying, If this train were never to move again I should not greatly mind. Then gradually a—how shall I say—a growing desire to—er—you know—welled up within me. Nervous probably. In fact now I am sure. You know, the feeling of being confined.

MRS ROONEY: Yes yes, I have been through that.

MR ROONEY: If we sit here much longer, I said, I really do not know what I shall do. I got up and paced to and fro between the seats, like a caged beast.

MRS ROONEY: That is a help sometimes.

MR ROONEY: After what seemed an eternity we simply moved off. And the next thing was Barrell bawling the abhorred name. I got down and Jerry led me to the men's, or Fir as they call it now, from Vir Viris I suppose, the V becoming F, in accordance with Grimm's Law. [*Pause.*] The rest you know. [*Pause.*] You say nothing? [*Pause.*] Say something. Maddy. Say you believe me.

MRS ROONEY: I remember once attending a lecture by one of these new mind doctors. I forget what you call them. He spoke—

MR ROONEY: A lunatic specialist?

MRS ROONEY: No no, just the troubled mind. I was hoping he might shed a little light on my lifelong preoccupation with horses' buttocks.

MR ROONEY: A neurologist.

MRS ROONEY: No no, just mental distress, the name will come back to me in the night. I remember his telling us the story of a little girl, very strange and unhappy in her ways, and how he treated her unsuccessfully over a period of years and was finally obliged to give up the case. He could find nothing wrong with her, he said. The only thing wrong

with her as far as he could see was that she was dying.  
And she did in fact die, shortly after he had washed his hands of her.

MR ROONEY: Well? What is there so wonderful about that?

MRS ROONEY: No, it was just something he said, and the way he said it, that have haunted me ever since.

MR ROONEY: You lie awake at night, tossing to and fro and brooding on it.

MRS ROONEY: On it and other . . . wretchedness. [*Pause.*] When he had done with the little girl he stood there motionless for some time, quite two minutes I should say, looking down at his table. Then he suddenly raised his head and exclaimed, as if he had had a revelation, The trouble with her was she had never really been born! [*Pause.*] He spoke throughout without notes. [*Pause.*] I left before the end.

MR ROONEY: Nothing about your buttocks? [MRS ROONEY weeps. *In affectionate remonstrance.*] Maddy!

MRS ROONEY: There is nothing to be done for those people!

MR ROONEY: For which is there? [*Pause.*] That does not sound right somehow. [*Pause.*] What way am I facing?

MRS ROONEY: What?

MR ROONEY: I have forgotten what way I am facing.

MRS ROONEY: You have turned aside and are bowed down over the ditch.

MR ROONEY: There is a dead dog down there.

MRS ROONEY: No no, just the rotting leaves.

MR ROONEY: In June? Rotting leaves in June?

MRS ROONEY: Yes, dear, from last year, and from the year before last, and from the year before that again. [*Silence. Rainy wind. They move on. Dragging steps, etc.*] There is that lovely laburnum again. Poor thing, it is losing all its tassels. [*Dragging steps, etc.*] There are the first drops. [*Rain. Dragging steps, etc.*] Golden drizzle. [*Dragging steps, etc.*] Do not mind me, dear, I am just talking to myself. [*Rain heavier. Dragging steps, etc.*] Can hinnies procreate, I wonder? [*They halt.*]

MR ROONEY: Say that again.

MRS ROONEY: Come on, dear, don't mind me, we are getting drenched.

MR ROONEY: [*Forcibly.*] Can what what?

MRS ROONEY: Hinnies procreate. [*Silence.*] You know, hinnies, or jinnies, aren't they barren, or sterile, or whatever it is? [*Pause.*] It wasn't an ass's colt at all, you know, I asked the Regius Professor.  
[*Pause.*]

MR ROONEY: He should know.

MRS ROONEY: Yes, it was a hinny, he rode into Jerusalem or wherever it was on a hinny. [*Pause.*] That must mean something. [*Pause.*] It's like the sparrows, than many of which we are of more value, they weren't sparrows at all.

MR ROONEY: Than many of which! . . . You exaggerate, Maddy.

MRS ROONEY: [*With emotion.*] They weren't sparrows at all!

MR ROONEY: Does that put our price up?

[*Silence. They move on. Wind and rain. Dragging feet, etc. They halt.*]

MRS ROONEY: Do you want some dung? [*Silence. They move on. Wind and rain, etc. They halt.*] Why do you stop? Do you want to say something?

MR ROONEY: No.

MRS ROONEY: Then why do you stop?

MR ROONEY: It is easier.

MRS ROONEY: Are you very wet?

MR ROONEY: To the buff.

MRS ROONEY: The buff?

MR ROONEY: The buff. From buffalo.

MRS ROONEY: We shall hang up all our things in the hot-cupboard and get into our dressing-gowns. [*Pause.*] Put your arm round me. [*Pause.*] Be nice to me! [*Pause. Gratefully.*] Ah, Dan! [*They move on. Wind and rain. Dragging feet, etc. Faintly same music as before. They halt. Music clearer. Silence but for music playing. Music dies.*] All day the same old record. All alone in that great empty house. She must be a very old woman now.

MR ROONEY: [*Indistinctly.*] Death and the Maiden.  
[*Silence.*]

MRS ROONEY: You are crying. [*Pause.*] Are you crying?

MR ROONEY: [*Violently.*] Yes! [*They move on. Wind and rain. Dragging feet, etc. They halt. They move on. Wind*

*and rain. Dragging feet, etc. They halt.*] Who is the preacher tomorrow? The incumbent?

MRS ROONEY: No.

MR ROONEY: Thank God for that. Who?

MRS ROONEY: Hardy.

MR ROONEY: "How to be Happy though Married"?

MRS ROONEY: No no, he died, you remember. No connexion.

MR ROONEY: Has he announced his text?

MRS ROONEY: "The Lord upholdeth all that fall and raiseth up all those that be bowed down." [*Silence. They join in wild laughter. They move on. Wind and rain. Dragging feet, etc.*] Hold me tighter, Dan! [*Pause.*] Oh yes! [*They halt.*]

MR ROONEY: I hear something behind us.  
[*Pause.*]

MRS ROONEY: It looks like Jerry. [*Pause.*] It is Jerry.  
[*Sound of JERRY's running steps approaching. He halts beside them, panting.*]

JERRY: [*Panting.*] You dropped—

MRS ROONEY: Take your time, my little man, you will burst a blood-vessel.

JERRY: [*Panting.*] You dropped something, sir. Mr Barrell told me to run after you.

MRS ROONEY: Show. [*She takes the object.*] What is it? [*She examines it.*] What is this thing, Dan?

MR ROONEY: Perhaps it is not mine at all.

JERRY: Mr Barrell said it was, sir.

MRS ROONEY: It looks like a kind of ball. And yet it is not a ball.

MR ROONEY: Give it to me.

MRS ROONEY: [*Giving it.*] What is it, Dan?

MR ROONEY: It is a thing I carry about with me.

MRS ROONEY: Yes, but what—

MR ROONEY: [*Violently.*] It is a thing I carry about with me!  
[*Silence. MRS ROONEY looks for a penny.*]

MRS ROONEY: I have no small money. Have you?

MR ROONEY: I have none of any kind.

MRS ROONEY: We are out of change, Jerry. Remind Mr Rooney on Monday and he will give you a penny for your pains.

JERRY: Yes, Ma'am.

MR ROONEY: If I am alive.

JERRY: Yessir.

[JERRY starts running back towards the station.]

MRS ROONEY: Jerry! [JERRY halts.] Did you hear what the hitch was? [Pause.] Did you hear what kept the train so late?

MR ROONEY: How would he have heard? Come on.

MRS ROONEY: What was it, Jerry?

JERRY: It was a—

MR ROONEY: Leave the boy alone, he knows nothing! Come on!

MRS ROONEY: What was it, Jerry?

JERRY: It was a little child, Ma'am.

[MR ROONEY groans.]

MRS ROONEY: What do you mean, it was a little child?

JERRY: It was a little child fell out of the carriage, Ma'am.

[Pause.] On to the line, Ma'am. [Pause.] Under the wheels, Ma'am.

[Silence. JERRY runs off. His steps die away. Tempest of wind and rain. It abates. They move on. Dragging steps, etc. They halt. Tempest of wind and rain.]

END



# Act Without Words I

A mime for one player



Written in French in 1956, with music by John Beckett, the author's cousin. First published in Paris in 1957. Translated by the author and first published in English by Grove Press, New York, in 1958. First performed at the Royal Court Theatre, London, on 3 April 1957.

Desert. Dazzling light.

The man is flung backwards on stage from right wing. He falls, gets up immediately, dusts himself, turns aside, reflects.

Whistle from right wing.

He reflects, goes out right.

Immediately flung back on stage he falls, gets up immediately, dusts himself, turns aside, reflects.

Whistle from left wing.

He reflects, goes out left.

Immediately flung back on stage he falls, gets up immediately, dusts himself, turns aside, reflects.

Whistle from left wing.

He reflects, goes towards left wing, hesitates, thinks better of it, halts, turns aside, reflects.

A little tree descends from flies, lands. It has a single bough some three yards from ground and at its summit a meagre tuft of palms casting at its foot a circle of shadow.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He turns, sees tree, reflects, goes to it, sits down in its shadow, looks at his hands.

A pair of tailor's scissors descends from flies, comes to rest before tree, a yard from ground.

He continues to look at his hands.

Whistle from above.

He looks up, sees scissors, takes them and starts to trim his nails.

The palms close like a parasol, the shadow disappears.

He drops scissors, reflects.

A tiny carafe, to which is attached a huge label inscribed WATER, descends from flies, comes to rest some three yards from ground.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He looks up, sees carafe, reflects, gets up, goes and stands under it, tries in vain to reach it, renounces, turns aside, reflects.

A big cube descends from flies, lands.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He turns, sees cube, looks at it, at carafe, reflects, goes to cube, takes it up, carries it over and sets it down under carafe, tests its stability, gets up on it, tries in vain to reach carafe, renounces, gets down, carries cube back to its place, turns aside, reflects.

A second smaller cube descends from flies, lands.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He turns, sees second cube, looks at it, at carafe, goes to second cube, takes it up, carries it over and sets it down under carafe, tests its stability, gets up on it, tries in vain to reach carafe, renounces, gets down, takes up second cube to carry it back to its place, hesitates, thinks better of it, sets it down, goes to big cube, takes it up, carries it over and puts it on small one, tests their stability, gets up on them, the cubes collapse, he falls, gets up immediately, brushes himself, reflects.

He takes up small cube, puts it on big one, tests their stability, gets up on them and is about to reach carafe when it is pulled up a little way and comes to rest beyond his reach.

He gets down, reflects, carries cubes back to their place, one by one, turns aside, reflects.

A third still smaller cube descends from flies, lands.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He turns, sees third cube, looks at it, reflects, turns aside, reflects.

The third cube is pulled up and disappears in flies.

Beside carafe a rope descends from flies, with knots to facilitate ascent.

He continues to reflect.

Whistle from above.

He turns, sees rope, reflects, goes to it, climbs up it and is about to reach carafe when rope is let out and deposits him back on ground.

He reflects, looks around for scissors, sees them, goes and picks them up, returns to rope and starts to cut it with scissors.

The rope is pulled up, lifts him off ground, he hangs on, succeeds in cutting rope, falls back on ground, drops scissors, gets up again immediately, brushes himself, reflects.

The rope is pulled up quickly and disappears in flies.

With length of rope in his possession he makes a lasso with which he tries to lasso the carafe.

The carafe is pulled up quickly and disappears in flies.

He turns aside, reflects.

He goes with lasso in his hand to tree, looks at bough, turns and looks at cubes, looks again at bough, drops lasso, goes to cubes, takes up small one, carries it over and sets it down under bough, goes back for big one, takes it up and carries it over under bough, makes to put it on small one, hesitates, thinks better of it, sets it down, takes up small one and puts it on big one, tests their stability, turns aside and stoops to pick up lasso.

The bough folds down against trunk.

He straightens up with lasso in his hand, turns and sees what has happened.

He drops lasso, turns aside, reflects.

He carries back cubes to their place, one by one, goes back for lasso, carries it over to the cubes and lays it in a neat coil on small one.

He turns aside, reflects.

Whistle from right wing.

He reflects, goes out right.

Immediately flung back on stage he falls, gets up immediately, brushes himself, turns aside, reflects.

Whistle from left wing.

He does not move.

He looks at his hands, looks round for scissors, sees them, goes and picks them up, starts to trim his nails, stops, reflects,

runs his finger along blade of scissors, goes and lays them on small cube, turns aside, opens his collar, frees his neck and fingers it.

The small cube is pulled up and disappears in flies, carrying away rope and scissors.

He turns to take scissors, sees what has happened.

He turns aside, reflects.

He goes and sits down on big cube.

The big cube is pulled from under him. He falls. The big cube is pulled up and disappears in flies.

He remains lying on his side, his face towards auditorium, staring before him.

The carafe descends from flies and comes to rest a few feet from his body.

He does not move.

Whistle from above.

He does not move.

The carafe descends further, dangles and plays about his face.

He does not move.

The carafe is pulled up and disappears in flies.

The bough returns to horizontal, the palms open, the shadow returns.

Whistle from above.

He does not move.

The tree is pulled up and disappears in flies.

He looks at his hands.

CURTAIN

# Act Without Words II

A mime for two players

Written, according to Beckett, at about the same time as *Act Without Words I* (1956). Translated from the French by the author and first published in *New Departures*, vol. 1 (Summer, 1959). First performed probably at the Institute of Contemporary Arts, London, on 25 January 1960.

#### NOTE

This mime should be played on a low and narrow platform at back of stage, violently lit in its entire length, the rest of the stage being in darkness. Frieze effect.

A is slow, awkward (gags dressing and undressing), absent. B brisk, rapid, precise. The two actions therefore, though B has more to do than A, should have approximately the same duration.

#### ARGUMENT

Beside each other on ground, two yards from right wing, two sacks, A's and B's, A's being to right (as seen from auditorium) of B's, i.e. nearer right wing. On ground beside sack B a little pile of clothes (C) neatly folded (coat and trousers surmounted by boots and hat).

Enter goad right, strictly horizontal. The point stops a foot short of sack A. Pause. The point draws back, pauses, darts forward into sack, withdraws, recoils to a foot short of sack. Pause. The sack does not move. The point draws back again, a little further than before, pauses, darts forward again into sack, withdraws, recoils to a foot short of sack. Pause. The sack moves. Exit goad.

A, wearing shirt, crawls out of sack, halts, broods, prays, broods, gets to his feet, broods, takes a little bottle of pills from his shirt pocket, broods, swallows a pill, puts bottle back, broods, goes to clothes, broods, puts on clothes, broods, takes a large partly-eaten carrot from coat pocket, bites off a piece, chews an instant, spits it out with disgust, puts carrot back, broods, picks up two sacks, carries them bowed and staggering



half-way to left wing, sets them down, broods, takes off clothes (except shirt), lets them fall in an untidy heap, broods, takes another pill, broods, kneels, prays, crawls into sack and lies still, sack A being now to left of sack B.

*Pause.*

Enter goad right on wheeled support (one wheel). The point stops a foot short of sack B. Pause. The point draws back, pauses, darts forward into sack, withdraws, recoils to a foot short of sack. Pause. The sack moves. Exit goad.

B, wearing shirt, crawls out of sack, gets to his feet, takes from shirt pocket and consults a large watch, puts watch back, does exercises, consults watch, takes a tooth brush from shirt pocket and brushes teeth vigorously, puts brush back, rubs scalp vigorously, takes a comb from shirt pocket and combs hair, puts comb back, consults watch, goes to clothes, puts them on, consults watch, takes a brush from coat pocket and brushes clothes vigorously, brushes hair vigorously, puts brush back, takes a little mirror from coat pocket and inspects appearance, puts mirror back, takes carrot from coat pocket, bites off a piece, chews and swallows with appetite, puts carrot back, consults watch, takes a map from coat pocket and consults it, puts map back, consults watch, takes a compass from coat pocket and consults it, puts compass back, consults watch, picks up two sacks and carries them bowed and staggering to two yards short of left wing, sets them down, consults watch, takes off clothes (except shirt), folds them in a neat pile, consults watch, does exercises, consults watch, rubs scalp, combs hair, brushes teeth, consults and winds watch, crawls into sack and lies still, sack B being now to left of sack A as originally.

*Pause.*

Enter goad right on wheeled support (two wheels). The point stops a foot short of sack A. Pause. The point draws back, pauses, darts forward into sack, withdraws, recoils to a foot short of sack. Pause. The sack does not move. The point draws back again, a little further than before, pauses, darts forward again into sack, withdraws, recoils to a foot short of sack.

Pause. The sack moves. Exit goad.

A crawls out of sack, halts, broods, prays.

CURTAIN

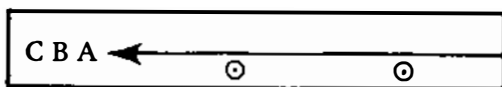
POSITION I



POSITION II



POSITION III



STAGE FRONT



# Krapp's Last Tape

Written in English in early 1958. First published in *Evergreen Review* (Summer 1958). First performed at the Royal Court Theatre, London, on 28 October 1958.

*A late evening in the future.*

**KRAPP'S den.**

*Front centre a small table, the two drawers of which open towards the audience.*

*Sitting at the table, facing front, i.e. across from the drawers, a wearish old man: KRAPP.*

*Rusty black narrow trousers too short for him. Rusty black sleeveless waistcoat, four capacious pockets. Heavy silver watch and chain. Grimy white shirt open at neck, no collar. Surprising pair of dirty white boots, size ten at least, very narrow and pointed.*

*White face. Purple nose. Disordered grey hair. Unshaven.*

*Very near-sighted (but unspectacled). Hard of hearing.*

*Cracked voice. Distinctive intonation.*

*Laborious walk.*

*On the table a tape-recorder with microphone and a number of cardboard boxes containing reels of recorded tapes.*

*Table and immediately adjacent area in strong white light. Rest of stage in darkness.*

*KRAPP remains a moment motionless, heaves a great sigh, looks at his watch, fumbles in his pockets, takes out an envelope, puts it back, fumbles, takes out a small bunch of keys, raises it to his eyes, chooses a key, gets up and moves to front of table. He stoops, unlocks first drawer, peers into it, feels about inside it, takes out a reel of tape, peers at it, puts it back, locks drawer, unlocks second drawer, peers into it, feels about inside it, takes out a large banana, peers at it, locks drawer, puts keys back in his pocket. He turns, advances to edge of stage, halts, strokes banana, peels it, drops skin at his feet, puts end of*

*banana in his mouth and remains motionless, staring vacuously before him. Finally he bites off the end, turns aside and begins pacing to and fro at edge of stage, in the light, i.e. not more than four or five paces either way, meditatively eating banana. He treads on skin, slips, nearly falls, recovers himself, stoops and peers at skin and finally pushes it, still stooping, with his foot over edge of stage into pit. He resumes his pacing, finishes banana, returns to table, sits down, remains a moment motionless, heaves a great sigh, takes keys from his pockets, raises them to his eyes, chooses key, gets up and moves to front of table, unlocks second drawer, takes out a second large banana, peers at it, locks drawer, puts back keys in his pocket, turns, advances to edge of stage, halts, strokes banana, peels it, tosses skin into pit, puts end of banana in his mouth and remains motionless, staring vacuously before him. Finally he has an idea, puts banana in his waistcoat pocket, the end emerging, and goes with all the speed he can muster backstage into darkness. Ten seconds. Loud pop of cork. Fifteen seconds. He comes back into light carrying an old ledger and sits down at table. He lays ledger on table, wipes his mouth, wipes his hands on the front of his waistcoat, brings them smartly together and rubs them.*

KRAPP: *[Briskly.] Ah! [He bends over ledger, turns the pages, finds the entry he wants, reads.] Box . . . three . . . spool . . . five. [He raises his head and stares front. With relish.] Spool! [Pause.] Spoooool! [Happy smile. Pause. He bends over table, starts peering and poking at the boxes.] Box . . . three . . . three . . . four . . . two . . . [with surprise] nine! good God! . . . seven . . . ah! the little rascal! [He takes up box, peers at it.] Box three. [He lays it on table, opens it and peers at spools inside.] Spool . . . [he peers at ledger] . . . five . . . [he peers at spools] . . . five . . . five . . . ah! the little scoundrel! [He takes out a spool, peers at it.] Spool five. [He lays it on table, closes box three, puts it back with the others, takes up the spool.] Box three, spool five. [He bends over the machine, looks up. With relish.] Spoooool! [Happy smile. He bends, loads spool on machine, rubs his hands.] Ah! [He peers at ledger, reads*

*entry at foot of page.] Mother at rest at last . . . . Hm . . . . The black ball . . . . [He raises his head, stares blankly front. Puzzled.] Black ball? . . . [He peers again at ledger, reads.] The dark nurse . . . . [He raises his head, broods, peers again at ledger, reads.] Slight improvement in bowel condition. . . . Hm . . . . Memorable . . . what? [He peers closer.] Equinox, memorable equinox. [He raises his head, stares blankly front. Puzzled.] Memorable equinox? . . . [Pause. He shrugs his shoulders, peers again at ledger, reads.] Farewell to—[he turns page]—love. [He raises his head, broods, bends over machine, switches on and assumes listening posture, i.e. leaning forward, elbows on table, hand cupping ear towards machine, face front.]*

TAPE: *[Strong voice, rather pompous, clearly Krapp's at a much earlier time.] Thirty-nine today, sound as a—[Settling himself more comfortably he knocks one of the boxes off the table, curses, switches off, sweeps boxes and ledger violently to the ground, winds tape back to beginning, switches on, resumes posture.] Thirty-nine today, sound as a bell, apart from my old weakness, and intellectually I have now every reason to suspect at the . . . [hesitates] . . . crest of the wave—or thereabouts. Celebrated the awful occasion, as in recent years, quietly at the Wine-house. Not a soul. Sat before the fire with closed eyes, separating the grain from the husks. Jotted down a few notes, on the back of an envelope. Good to be back in my den, in my old rags. Have just eaten I regret to say three bananas and only with difficulty refrained from a fourth. Fatal things for a man with my condition. [Vehemently.] Cut'em out! [Pause.] The new light above my table is a great improvement. With all this darkness round me I feel less alone. [Pause.] In a way. [Pause.] I love to get up and move about in it, then back here to . . . [hesitates] . . . me. [Pause.] Krapp. [Pause.]*

*The grain, now what I wonder do I mean by that, I mean . . . [hesitates] . . . I suppose I mean those things worth having when all the dust has—when all my dust has settled.*



I close my eyes and try and imagine them.

[*Pause. KRAPP closes his eyes briefly.*]

Extraordinary silence this evening, I strain my ears and do not hear a sound. Old Miss McGlome always sings at this hour. But not tonight. Songs of her girlhood, she says.

Hard to think of her as a girl. Wonderful woman though.

Connaught, I fancy. [*Pause.*] Shall I sing when I am her age, if I ever am? No. [*Pause.*] Did I sing as a boy? No.

[*Pause.*] Did I ever sing? No.

[*Pause.*]

Just been listening to an old year, passages at random. I did not check in the book, but it must be at least ten or twelve years ago. At that time I think I was still living on and off with Bianca in Kedar Street. Well out of that, Jesus yes! Hopeless business. [*Pause.*] Not much about her, apart from a tribute to her eyes. Very warm. I suddenly saw them again. [*Pause.*] Incomparable! [*Pause.*] Ah well . . .

[*Pause.*] These old P.M.s are gruesome, but I often find them—[*KRAPP switches off, broods, switches on.*—a help before embarking on a new . . . [*hesitates*] . . . retrospect. Hard to believe I was ever that young whelp. The voice!

Jesus! And the aspirations! [*Brief laugh in which KRAPP joins.*] And the resolutions! [*Brief laugh in which KRAPP joins.*]

To drink less, in particular. [*Brief laugh of KRAPP alone.*]

Statistics. Seventeen hundred hours, out of the preceding eight thousand odd, consumed on licensed premises alone. More than 20 per cent, say 40 per cent of his waking life. [*Pause.*] Plans for a less . . . [*hesitates*] . . . engrossing sexual life. Last illness of his father. Flagging pursuit of happiness. Unattainable laxation. Sneers at what he calls his youth and thanks to God that it's over.

[*Pause.*] False ring there. [*Pause.*] Shadows of the opus . . . magnum. Closing with a—[*brief laugh*—yelp to Providence. [*Prolonged laugh in which KRAPP joins.*] What remains of all that misery? A girl in a shabby green coat, on a railway-station platform? No?

[*Pause.*]

When I look—

[*KRAPP switches off, broods, looks at his watch, gets up,*

*goes backstage into darkness. Ten seconds. Pop of cork. Ten seconds. Second cork. Ten seconds. Third cork. Ten seconds. Brief burst of quavering song.]*

KRAPP: [Sings.]           Now the day is over,  
                                  Night is drawing nigh-igh,  
                                  Shadows—

*[Fit of coughing. He comes back into light, sits down, wipes his mouth, switches on, resumes his listening posture.]*

TAPE: —back on the year that is gone, with what I hope is perhaps a glint of the old eye to come, there is of course the house on the canal where mother lay a-dying, in the late autumn, after her long viduity [KRAPP gives a start] and the—[KRAPP switches off, winds back tape a little, bends his ear closer to machine, switches on]—a-dying, in the late autumn, after her long viduity, and the—

*[KRAPP switches off, raises his head, stares blankly before him. His lips move in the syllables of 'viduity'. No sound. He gets up, goes backstage into darkness, comes back with an enormous dictionary, lays it on table, sits down and looks up the word.]*

KRAPP: [Reading from dictionary.] State—or condition—of being—or remaining—a widow—or widower. [Looks up. Puzzled.] Being—or remaining? . . . [Pause. He peers again at dictionary. Reading.] 'Deep weeds of viduity.' . . . Also of an animal, especially a bird . . . the vidua or weaver-bird . . . Black plumage of male . . . [He looks up. With relish.] The vidua-bird!  
[Pause. He closes dictionary, switches on, resumes listening posture.]

TAPE: —bench by the weir from where I could see her window. There I sat, in the biting wind, wishing she were gone. [Pause.] Hardly a soul, just a few regulars, nursemaids, infants, old men, dogs. I got to know them quite well—oh by appearance of course I mean! One dark young beauty I recollect particularly, all white and starch, incomparable bosom, with a big black hooded perambulator, most funereal thing. Whenever I looked in her direction she had her eyes on me. And yet when I was bold enough to speak to her—not having been introduced—she threatened to call

a policeman. As if I had designs on her virtue! [*Laugh. Pause.*] The face she had! The eyes! Like . . . [*hesitates*] . . . chrysolite! [*Pause.*] Ah well . . . [*Pause.*] I was there when—[*KRAPP switches off, broods, switches on again.*—the blind went down, one of those dirty brown roller affairs, throwing a ball for a little white dog as chance would have it. I happened to look up and there it was. All over and done with, at last. I sat on for a few moments with the ball in my hand and the dog yelping and pawing at me. [*Pause.*] Moments. Her moments, my moments. [*Pause.*] The dog's moments. [*Pause.*] In the end I held it out to him and he took it in his mouth, gently, gently. A small, old, black, hard, solid rubber ball. [*Pause.*] I shall feel it, in my hand, until my dying day. [*Pause.*] I might have kept it. [*Pause.*] But I gave it to the dog. [*Pause.*]

Ah well . . .

[*Pause.*]

Spiritually a year of profound gloom and indigence until that memorable night in March, at the end of the jetty, in the howling wind, never to be forgotten, when suddenly I saw the whole thing. The vision at last. This I fancy is what I have chiefly to record this evening, against the day when my work will be done and perhaps no place left in my memory, warm or cold, for the miracle that . . . [*hesitates*] . . . for the fire that set it alight. What I suddenly saw then was this, that the belief I had been going on all my life, namely—[*KRAPP switches off impatiently, winds tape forward, switches on again*—great granite rocks the foam flying up in the light of the lighthouse and the wind-gauge spinning like a propeller, clear to me at last that the dark I have always struggled to keep under is in reality my most—[*KRAPP curses, switches off, winds tape forward, switches on again*—unshatterable association until my dissolution of storm and night with the light of the understanding and the fire—[*KRAPP curses louder, switches off, winds tape forward, switches on again*—my face in her breasts and my hand on her. We lay there without moving. But under us all moved, and moved us, gently, up and down, and from side to side.

[Pause.]

Past midnight. Never knew such silence. The earth might be uninhabited.

[Pause.]

Here I end—

[KRAPP switches off, winds tape back, switches on again.]

—upper lake, with the punt, bathed off the bank, then pushed out into the stream and drifted. She lay stretched out on the floorboards with her hands under her head and her eyes closed. Sun blazing down, bit of a breeze, water nice and lively. I noticed a scratch on her thigh and asked her how she came by it. Picking gooseberries, she said. I said again I thought it was hopeless and no good going on and she agreed, without opening her eyes. [Pause.] I asked her to look at me and after a few moments—[Pause.]—after a few moments she did, but the eyes just slits, because of the glare. I bent over her to get them in the shadow and they opened. [Pause. Low.] Let me in. [Pause.] We drifted in among the flags and stuck. The way they went down, sighing, before the stem! [Pause.] I lay down across her with my face in her breasts and my hand on her. We lay there without moving. But under us all moved, and moved us, gently, up and down, and from side to side.

[Pause.]

Past midnight. Never knew—

[KRAPP switches off, broods. Finally he fumbles in his pockets, encounters the banana, takes it out, peers at it, puts it back, fumbles, brings out envelope, fumbles, puts back envelope, looks at his watch, gets up and goes back-stage into darkness. Ten seconds. Sound of bottle against glass, then brief siphon. Ten seconds. Bottle against glass alone. Ten seconds. He comes back a little unsteadily into light, goes to front of table, takes out keys, raises them to his eyes, chooses key, unlocks first drawer, peers into it, feels about inside, takes out reel, peers at it, locks drawer, puts keys back in his pocket, goes and sits down, takes reel off machine, lays it on dictionary, loads virgin reel on machine, takes envelope from his pocket, consults back of it, lays it on table, switches on, clears his throat and begins to record.]

KRAPP: Just been listening to that stupid bastard I took myself for thirty years ago, hard to believe I was ever as bad as that. Thank God that's all done with anyway. [*Pause.*] The eyes she had! [*Broods, realizes he is recording silence, switches off, broods. Finally.*] Everything there, everything, all the—[*Realizes this is not being recorded, switches on.*] Everything there, everything on this old muckball, all the light and dark and famine and feasting of . . . [*hesitates*] . . . the ages! [*In a shout.*] Yes! [*Pause.*] Let that go! Jesus! Take his mind off his homework! Jesus! [*Pause. Weary.*] Ah well, maybe he was right. [*Pause.*] Maybe he was right. [*Broods. Realizes. Switches off. Consults envelope.*] Pah! [*Crumples it and throws it away. Broods. Switches on.*] Nothing to say, not a squeak. What's a year now? The sour cud and the iron stool. [*Pause.*] Revelled in the word spool. [*With relish.*] Spoooool! Happiest moment of the past half million. [*Pause.*] Seventeen copies sold, of which eleven at trade price to free circulating libraries beyond the seas. Getting known. [*Pause.*] One pound six and something, eight I have little doubt. [*Pause.*] Crawled out once or twice, before the summer was cold. Sat shivering in the park, drowned in dreams and burning to be gone. Not a soul. [*Pause.*] Last fancies. [*Vehemently.*] Keep 'em under! [*Pause.*] Scalded the eyes out of me reading *Effie* again, a page a day, with tears again. *Effie* . . . [*Pause.*] Could have been happy with her, up there on the Baltic, and the pines, and the dunes. [*Pause.*] Could I? [*Pause.*] And she? [*Pause.*] Pah! [*Pause.*] Fanny came in a couple of times. Bony old ghost of a whore. Couldn't do much, but I suppose better than a kick in the crutch. The last time wasn't so bad. How do you manage it, she said, at your age? I told her I'd been saving up for her all my life. [*Pause.*] Went to Vespers once, like when I was in short trousers. [*Pause. Sings.*]

Now the day is over,  
Night is drawing nigh-igh,  
Shadows—[*coughing, then almost inaudible*]  
of the evening  
Steal across the sky.

[*Gasping.*] Went to sleep and fell off the pew. [*Pause.*] Sometimes wondered in the night if a last effort mightn't —[*Pause.*] Ah finish your booze now and get to your bed. Go on with this drivel in the morning. Or leave it at that. [*Pause.*] Leave it at that. [*Pause.*] Lie propped up in the dark—and wander. Be again in the dingle on a Christmas Eve, gathering holly, the red-berried. [*Pause.*] Be again on Croghan on a Sunday morning, in the haze, with the bitch, stop and listen to the bells. [*Pause.*] And so on. [*Pause.*] Be again, be again. [*Pause.*] All that old misery. [*Pause.*] Once wasn't enough for you. [*Pause.*] Lie down across her. [*Long pause. He suddenly bends over machine, switches off, wrenches off tape, throws it away, puts on the other, winds it forward to the passage he wants, switches on, listens staring front.*]

TAPE: —gooseberries, she said. I said again I thought it was hopeless and no good going on and she agreed, without opening her eyes. [*Pause.*] I asked her to look at me and after a few moments—[*Pause.*—after a few moments she did, but the eyes just slits, because of the glare. I bent over to get them in the shadow and they opened. [*Pause. Low.*] Let me in. [*Pause.*] We drifted in among the flags and stuck. The way they went down, sighing, before the stem! [*Pause.*] I lay down across her with my face in her breasts and my hand on her. We lay there without moving. But under us all moved, and moved us, gently, up and down, and from side to side.

[*Pause. KRAPP'S lips move. No sound.*]

Past midnight. Never knew such silence. The earth might be uninhabited.

[*Pause.*]

Here I end this reel. Box—[*Pause.*—three, spool—[*Pause.*] —five. [*Pause.*] Perhaps my best years are gone. When there was a chance of happiness. But I wouldn't want them back. Not with the fire in me now. No, I wouldn't want them back.

[*KRAPP motionless staring before him. The tape runs on in silence.*]



**Rough for Theatre I**



Written in French in the late 1950s. First published in English translation by Grove Press, New York, in 1976.

*Street corner. Ruins.*

*A, blind, sitting on a folding-stool, scrapes his fiddle. Beside him the case, half open, upended, surmounted by alms bowl. He stops playing, turns his head audience right, listens.*  
*Pause.*

A: A penny for a poor old man, a penny for a poor old man.  
*[Silence. He resumes playing, stops again, turns his head right, listens. Enter B right, in a wheelchair which he propels by means of a pole. He halts. Irritated.]* A penny for a poor old man!  
*[Pause.]*

B: Music! *[Pause.]* So it is not a dream. At last! Nor a vision, they are mute and I am mute before them. *[He advances, halts, looks into bowl. Without emotion.]* Poor wretch. *[Pause.]* Now I may go back, the mystery is over. *[He pushes himself backwards, halts.]* Unless we join together, and live together, till death ensue. *[Pause.]* What would you say to that, Billy, may I call you Billy, like my son? *[Pause.]* Do you like company, Billy? *[Pause.]* Do you like tinned food, Billy?

A: What tinned food?

B: Corned beef, Billy, just corned beef. Enough to keep body and soul together, till summer, with care. *[Pause.]* No? *[Pause.]* A few potatoes too, a few pounds of potatoes too. *[Pause.]* Do you like potatoes, Billy? *[Pause.]* We might even let them sprout and then, when the time came, put them in the ground, we might even try that. *[Pause.]* I would choose the place and you would put them in the ground. *[Pause.]* No? *[Pause.]*

A: How are the trees doing?

B: Hard to say. It's winter, you know.

[*Pause.*]

A: Is it day or night?

B: Oh . . . [*he looks at the sky*] . . . day, if you like. No sun of course, otherwise you wouldn't have asked. [*Pause.*] Do you follow my reasoning? [*Pause.*] Have you your wits about you, Billy, have you still some of your wits about you?

A: But light?

B: Yes. [*Looks at sky.*] Yes, light, there is no other word for it. [*Pause.*] Shall I describe it to you? [*Pause.*] Shall I try to give you an idea of this light?

A: It seems to me sometimes I spend the night here, playing and listening. I used to feel twilight gather and make myself ready. I put away fiddle and bowl and had only to get to my feet, when she took me by the hand.  
[*Pause.*]

B: She?

A: My woman. [*Pause.*] A woman. [*Pause.*] But now . . .  
[*Pause.*]

B: Now?

A: When I set out I don't know, and when I get here I don't know, and while I am here I don't know, whether it is day or night.

B: You were not always as you are. What befell you? Women? Gambling? God?

A: I was always as I am.

B: Come!

A: [*Violently.*] I was always as I am, crouched in the dark, scratching an old jangle to the four winds!

B: [*Violently.*] We had our women, hadn't we? You yours to lead you by the hand and I mine to get me out of the chair in the evening and back into it again in the morning and to push me as far as the corner when I went out of my mind.

A: Cripple? [*Without emotion.*] Poor wretch.

B: Only one problem: the about-turn. I often felt, as I struggled, that it would be quicker to go on, right round the world. Till the day I realized I could go home backwards. [*Pause.*]

For example, I am at A. [*He pushes himself forward a little, halts.*] I push on to B. [*He pushes himself back a little, halts.*] And I return to A. [*With élan.*] The straight line! The vacant space! [*Pause.*] Do I begin to move you?

A: Sometimes I hear steps. Voices. I say to myself, They are coming back, some are coming back, to try and settle again, or to look for something they had left behind, or to look for someone they had left behind.

B: Come back! [*Pause.*] Who would want to come back here? [*Pause.*] And you never called out? [*Pause.*] Cried out? [*Pause.*] No?

A: Have you observed nothing?

B: Oh me you know, observe . . . I sit there, in my lair, in my chair, in the dark, twenty-three hours out of the twenty-four. [*Violently.*] What would you have me observe? [*Pause.*] Do you think we would make a match, now you are getting to know me?

A: Corned beef, did you say?

B: Apropos, what have you been living on, all this time? You must be famished.

A: There are things lying around.

B: Edible?

A: Sometimes.

B: Why don't you let yourself die?

A: On the whole I have been lucky. The other day I tripped over a sack of nuts.

B: No!

A: A little sack, full of nuts, in the middle of the road.

B: Yes, all right, but why don't you let yourself die?

A: I have thought of it.

B: [*Irritated.*] But you don't do it!

A: I'm not unhappy enough. [*Pause.*] That was always my unhap, unhappy, but not unhappy enough.

B: But you must be every day a little more so.

A: [*Violently.*] I am not unhappy enough!  
[*Pause.*]

B: If you ask me we were made for each other.

A: [*Comprehensive gesture.*] What does it all look like now?

B: Oh me you know . . . I never go far, just a little up and down

before my door. I never yet pushed on to here till now.

A: But you look about you?

B: No no.

A: After all those hours of darkness you don't—

B: [*Violently.*] No! [*Pause.*] Of course if you wish me to look about me I shall, And if you care to push me about I shall try to describe the scene, as we go along.

A: You mean you would guide me? I wouldn't get lost any more?

B: Exactly. I would say, Easy, Billy, we're heading for a great muckheap, turn back and wheel left when I give you the word.

A: You'd do that!

B: [*Pressing his advantage.*] Easy, Billy, easy, I see a round tin over there in the gutter, perhaps it's soup, or baked beans.

A: Baked beans!

[*Pause.*]

B: Are you beginning to like me? [*Pause.*] Or is it only my imagination?

A: Baked beans! [*He gets up, puts down fiddle and bowl on the stool and gropes towards B.*] Where are you?

B: Here, dear fellow. [*A lays hold of the chair and starts pushing it blindly.*] Stop!

A: [*Pushing the chair.*] It's a gift! A gift!

B: Stop! [*He strikes behind him with the pole. A lets go the chair, recoils. Pause. A gropes towards his stool, halts, lost.*] Forgive me! [*Pause.*] Forgive me, Billy!

A: Where am I? [*Pause.*] Where was I?

B: Now I've lost him. He was beginning to like me and I struck him. He'll leave me and I'll never see him again. I'll never see anyone again. We'll never hear the human voice again.

A: Have you not heard it enough? The same old moans and groans from the cradle to the grave.

B: [*Groaning.*] Do something for me, before you go!

A: There! Do you hear it? [*Pause. Groaning.*] I can't go! [*Pause.*] Do you hear it?

B: You can't go?

A: I can't go without my things.

B: What good are they to you?

A: None.

B: And you can't go without them?

A: No. [*He starts groping again, halts.*] I'll find them in the end.  
[*Pause.*] Or leave them for ever behind me.  
[*He starts groping again.*]

B: Straighten my rug, I feel the cold air on my foot. [*A halts.*]  
I'd do it myself, but it would take too long. [*Pause.*] Do that for me, Billy. Then I may go back, settle in the old nook again and say, I have seen man for the last time, I struck him and he succoured me. [*Pause.*] Find a few rags of love in my heart and die reconciled, with my species. [*Pause.*] What has you gaping at me like that? [*Pause.*] Have I said something I shouldn't have? [*Pause.*] What does my soul look like?  
[*A gropes towards him.*]

A: Make a sound.

[*B makes one. A gropes towards it, halts.*]

B: Have you no sense of smell either?

A: It's the same stink everywhere. [*He stretches out his hand.*]  
Am I within reach of your hand?  
[*He stands motionless with outstretched hand.*]

B: Wait, you're not going to do me a service for nothing?  
[*Pause.*] I mean unconditionally? [*Pause.*] Good God!  
[*Pause. He takes A's hand and draws it towards him.*]

A: Your foot.

B: What?

A: You said your foot.

B: Had I but known! [*Pause.*] Yes, my foot, tuck it in. [*A stoops, groping.*] On your knees, on your knees, you'll be more at your ease. [*He helps him to kneel at the right place.*] There.

A: [*Irritated.*] Let go my hand! You want me to help you and you hold my hand! [*B lets go his hand. A fumbles in the rug.*] Have you only one leg?

B: Just the one.

A: And the other?

B: It went bad and was removed.  
[*A tucks in the foot.*]

A: Will that do?

B: A little tighter. [*A tucks in tighter.*] What hands you have!  
[*Pause.*]

A: [*Groping towards B's torso.*] Is all the rest there?

B: You may stand up now and ask me a favour.

A: Is all the rest there?

B: Nothing else has been removed, if that is what you mean. [*A's hand, groping higher, reaches the face, stays.*]

A: Is that your face?

B: I confess it is. [*Pause.*] What else could it be? [*A's fingers stray, stay.*] That? My wen.

A: Red?

B: Purple. [*A withdraws his hand, remains kneeling.*] What hands you have!  
[*Pause.*]

A: Is it still day?

B: Day? [*Looks at sky.*] If you like. [*Looks.*] There is no other word for it.

A: Will it not soon be evening?  
[*B stoops to A, shakes him.*]

B: Come, Billy, get up, you're beginning to incommode me.

A: Will it not soon be night?  
[*B looks at sky.*]

B: Day . . . night . . . [*Looks.*] It seems to me sometimes the earth must have got stuck, one sunless day, in the heart of winter, in the grey of evening. [*Stoops to A, shakes him.*] Come on, Billy, up, you're beginning to embarrass me.

A: Is there grass anywhere?

B: I see none.

A: [*Vehement.*] Is there no green anywhere?

B: There's a little moss. [*Pause. A clasps his hands on the rug and rests his head on them.*] Good God! Don't tell me you're going to pray?

A: No.

B: Or weep?

A: No. [*Pause.*] I could stay like that for ever, with my head on an old man's knees.

B: Knee. [*Shaking him roughly.*] Get up, can't you!

A: [*Settling himself more comfortably.*] What peace! [*B pushes him roughly away, A falls to his hands and knees.*] Dora used to say, the days I hadn't earned enough, You and your harp! You'd do better crawling on all fours, with your

father's medals pinned to your arse and a money box round your neck. You and your harp! Who do you think you are? And she made me sleep on the floor. *[Pause.]* Who I thought I was . . . *[Pause.]* Ah that . . . I never could . . . *[Pause. He gets up.]* Never could . . . *[He starts groping again for his stool, halts, listens.]* If I listened long enough I'd hear it, a string would give.

B: Your harp? *[Pause.]* What's all this about a harp?

A: I once had a little harp. Be still and let me listen.  
*[Pause.]*

B: How long are you going to stay like that?

A: I can stay for hours listening to all the sounds.  
*[They listen.]*

B: What sounds?

A: I don't know what they are.  
*[They listen.]*

B: I can see it. *[Pause.]* I can—

A: *[Imploring.]* Will you not be still?

B: No! *[A takes his head in his hands.]* I can see it clearly, over there on the stool. *[Pause.]* What if I took it, Billy, and made off with it? *[Pause.]* Eh Billy, what would you say to that? *[Pause.]* There might be another old man, some day, would come out of his hole and find you playing the mouth-organ. And you'd tell him of the little fiddle you once had. *[Pause.]* Eh Billy? *[Pause.]* Or singing. *[Pause.]* Eh Billy, what would you say to that? *[Pause.]* There croaking to the winter wind *[rime with unkind]*, having lost his little mouth-organ. *[He pokes him in the back with the pole.]* Eh Billy? *[A whirls round, seizes the end of the pole and wrenches it from B's grasp.]*





## Rough for Theatre II

Like *Rough for Theatre I*, written in French in the late 1950s.  
First published in English translation by Grove Press, New  
York, in 1976.

*Upstage centre high double window open on bright night sky.  
Moon invisible.*

*Downstage audience left, equidistant from wall and axis of window, small table and chair. On table an extinguished reading-lamp and a briefcase crammed with documents.*

*Downstage right, forming symmetry, identical table and chair.  
Extinguished lamp only.*

*Downstage left door.*

*Standing motionless before left half of window with his back to stage, c.*

*Long pause.*

*Enter A. He closes door, goes to table on right and sits with his back to right wall. Pause. He switches on lamp, takes out his watch, consults it and lays it on the table. Pause. He switches off.  
Long pause.*

*Enter B. He closes door, goes to table on left and sits with his back to left wall. Pause. He switches on lamp, opens briefcase and empties contents on table. He looks round, sees A.*

**B:** Well!

**A:** Hsst! Switch off. [B switches off. Long pause. Low.] What a night! [Long pause. Musing.] I still don't understand. [Pause.] Why he needs our services. [Pause.] A man like him. [Pause.] And why we give them free. [Pause.] Men like us. [Pause.] Mystery. [Pause.] Ah well . . . [Pause. He switches on.] Shall we go? [B switches on, rummages in his papers.] The crux. [B rummages.] We sum up and clear out. [B rummages.] Set to go?

**B:** Rearing.

A: We attend.

B: Let him jump.

A: When?

B: Now.

A: From where?

B: From here will do. Three to three and a half metres per floor, say twenty-five in all.

[Pause.]

A: I could have sworn we were only on the sixth. [Pause.] He runs no risk?

B: He has only to land on his arse, the way he lived. The spine snaps and the tripes explode.

[Pause. A gets up, goes to the window, leans out, looks down. He straightens up, looks at the sky. Pause. He goes back to his seat.]

A: Full moon.

B: Not quite. Tomorrow.

[A takes a little diary from his pocket.]

A: What's the date?

B: Twenty-fourth. Twenty-fifth tomorrow.

A: [Turning pages.] Nineteen . . . twenty-two . . . twenty-four.

[Reads.] 'Our Lady of Succour. Full moon.' [He puts back the diary in his pocket.] We were saying then . . . what was it . . . let him jump. Our conclusion. Right?

B: Work, family, third fatherland, cunt, finances, art and nature, heart and conscience, health, housing conditions, God and man, so many disasters.

[Pause.]

A: [Meditative.] Does it follow? [Pause.] Does it follow?

[Pause.] And his sense of humour? Of proportion?

B: Swamped.

[Pause.]

A: May we not be mistaken?

B: [Indignant.] We have been to the best sources. All weighed and weighed again, checked and verified. Not a word here [brandishing sheaf of papers] that is not cast iron. Tied together like a cathedral. [He flings down the papers on the table. They scatter on the floor.] Shit!

[He picks them up. A raises his lamp and shines it about him.]

A: Seen worse dumps. [*Turning towards window.*] Worse out-looks. [*Pause.*] Is that Jupiter we see?  
[*Pause.*]

B: Where?

A: Switch off. [*They switch off.*] It must be.

B: [*Irritated.*] Where?

A: [*Irritated.*] There. [*B cranes.*] There, on the right, in the corner.  
[*Pause.*]

B: No. It twinkles.

A: What is it then?

B: [*Indifferent.*] No idea. Sirius. [*He switches on.*] Well? Do we work or play? [*A switches on.*] You forget this is not his home. He's only here to take care of the cat. At the end of the month shoosh back to the barge. [*Pause. Louder.*] You forget this is not his home.

A: [*Irritated.*] I forget, I forget! And he, does he not forget?  
[*With passion.*] But that's what saves us!

B: [*Searching through his papers.*] Memory . . . memory . . . [*He takes up a sheet.*] I quote: 'An elephant's for the eating cares, a sparrow's for the Lydian airs.' Testimony of Mr Swell, organist at Seaton Sluice and lifelong friend.  
[*Pause.*]

A: [*Glum.*] Tsstss!

B: I quote: 'Questioned on this occasion'—open brackets—'(judicial separation)'—close brackets—'regarding the deterioration of our relations, all he could adduce was the five or six miscarriages which clouded'—open brackets—'(oh through no act of mine!)'—close brackets—'the early days of our union and the veto which in consequence I had finally to oppose'—open brackets—'(oh not for want of inclination!)'—close brackets—'to anything remotely resembling the work of love. But on the subject of our happiness'—open brackets—'(for it too came our way, unavoidably, and here my mind goes back to the first vows exchanged at Wootton Bassett under the bastard acacias, or again to the first fifteen minutes of our wedding night at Littlestone-on-Sea, or yet again to those first long studious evenings in our nest on Commercial Road East)'—close brackets—'on

the subject of our happiness not a word, Sir, not one word.' Testimony of Mrs Aspasia Budd-Crocker, button designer in residence, Commercial Road East.

A : [*Glum.*] Tsstss!

B : I quote again: 'Of our national epos he remembered only the calamities, which did not prevent him from winning a minor scholarship in the subject.' Testimony of Mr Peaberry, market gardener in the Deeping Fens and lifelong friend. [*Pause.*] 'Not a tear was known to fall in our family, and God knows they did in torrents, that was not caught up and piously preserved in that inexhaustible reservoir of sorrow, with the date, the hour and the occasion, and not a joy, fortunately they were few, that was not on the contrary irrevocably dissolved, as by a corrosive. In that he took after me.' Testimony of the late Mrs Darcy-Crocker, woman of letters. [*Pause.*] Care for more?

A : Enough.

B : I quote: 'To hear him talk about his life, after a glass or two, you would have thought he had never set foot outside hell. He had us in stitches. I worked it up into a skit that went down well.' Testimony of Mr Moore, light comedian, c/o Widow Merryweather-Moore, All Saints on the Wash, and lifelong friend. [*Pause.*]

A : [*Stricken.*] Tsstss! [*Pause.*] Tsstssstss!

B : You see. [*Emphatic.*] This is not his home and he knows it full well. [*Pause.*]

A : Now let's have the positive elements.

B : Positive? You mean of a nature to make him think . . . [*hesitates, then with sudden violence*] . . . that some day things might change? Is that what you want? [*Pause. Calmer.*] There are none.

A : [*Wearily.*] Oh yes there are, that's the beauty of it. [*Pause. B rummages in his papers.*]

B : [*Looking up.*] Forgive me, Bertrand. [*Pause. Rummages. Looks up.*] I don't know what came over me. [*Pause. Rummages. Looks up.*] A moment of consternation. [*Pause. Rummages.*] There is that incident of the lottery . . .

possibly. Remember?

A: No.

B: [*Reading.*] 'Two hundred lots . . . winner receives high class watch . . . solid gold, hallmark nineteen carats, marvel of accuracy, showing year, month, date, day, hour, minute and second, super chic, unbreakable hair spring, chrono escapement nineteen rubies, anti-shock, anti-magnetic, airtight, waterproof, stainless, self-winding, centre seconds hand, Swiss parts, de luxe lizard band.'

A: What did I tell you? However unhelpfully. The mere fact of chancing his luck. I knew he had a spark left in him.

B: The trouble is he didn't procure it himself. It was a gift. That you forget.

A: [*Irritated.*] I forget, I forget! And he, does he not—[*Pause.*] At least he kept it.

B: If you can call it that.

A: At least he accepted it. [*Pause.*] At least he didn't refuse it.

B: I quote: 'The last time I laid eyes on him I was on my way to the Post Office to cash an order for back-pay. The area before the building is shut off by a row of bollards with chains hung between them. He was seated on one of these with his back to the Thompson works. To all appearances down and out. He sat doubled in two, his hands on his knees, his legs astraddle, his head sunk. For a moment I wondered if he was not vomiting. But on drawing nearer I could see he was merely scrutinizing, between his feet, a lump of dogshit. I moved it slightly with the tip of my umbrella and observed how his gaze followed the movement and fastened on the object in its new position. This at three o'clock in the afternoon if you please! I confess I had not the heart to bid him the time of day, I was overcome. I simply slipped into his hip pocket a lottery ticket I had no use for, while silently wishing him the best of luck. When two hours later I emerged from the Post Office, having cashed my order, he was at the same place and in the same attitude. I sometimes wonder if he is still alive.' Testimony of Mr Feckman, certified accountant and friend for better and for worse.

[*Pause.*]



A: Dated when?

B: Recent.

A: It has such a bygone ring. [*Pause.*] Nothing else?

B: Oh ... bits and scraps ... good graces of an heirless aunt ... unfinished—

A: Hairless aunt?

B: ... heirless aunt ... unfinished game of chess with a correspondent in Tasmania ... hope not dead of living to see the extermination of the species ... literary aspirations incompletely stifled ... bottom of a dairy-woman in Waterloo Lane ... you see the kind of thing.

[*Pause.*]

A: We pack up this evening, right?

B: Without fail. Tomorrow we're at Bury St Edmunds.

A: [*Sadly.*] We'll leave him none the wiser. We'll leave him now, never to meet again, having added nothing to what he knew already.

B: All these testimonies were new to him. They will have finished him off.

A: Not necessarily. [*Pause.*] Any light on that? [*Papers.*] This is vital. [*Papers.*] Something ... I seem to remember ... something ... he said himself.

B: [*Papers.*] Under 'Confidences' then. [*Brief laugh.*] Slim file. [*Papers.*] Confidences ... confidences ... ah!

A: [*Impatient.*] Well?

B: [*Reading.*] '... sick headaches ... eye trouble ... irrational fear of vipers ... ear trouble ...'—nothing for us there—'... fibroid tumours ... pathological horror of songbirds ... throat trouble ... need of affection ...'—we're coming to it—'... inner void ... congenital timidity ... nose trouble ...'—ah! listen to this!—'... morbidly sensitive to the opinion of others ...' [*Looks up.*] What did I tell you?

A: [*Glum.*] Tsstss!

B: I'll read the whole passage: '... morbidly sensitive to the opinion of others—' [*His lamp goes out.*] Well! The bulb has blown! [*The lamp goes on again.*] No, it hasn't! Must be a faulty connection. [*Examines lamp, straightens flex.*] The flex was twisted, now all is well. [*Reading.*] '... morbidly sensitive—' [*The lamp goes out.*] Bugger and shit!

A: Try giving her a shake. [B *shakes the lamp. It goes on again.*]  
See! I picked up that wrinkle in the Band of Hope.  
[Pause.]

B: [ *Together.* ] '... morbidly sensitive—'  
A: Keep your hands off the table.

B: What?

A: Keep your hands off the table. If it's a connection the least jog can do it.

B: [ *Having pulled back his chair a little way.* ] '... morbidly sensitive—'  
[ *The lamp goes out. B bangs on the table with his fist. The lamp goes on again. Pause.* ]

A: Mysterious affair, electricity.

B: [ *Hurriedly.* ] '... morbidly sensitive to the opinion of others at the time, I mean as often and for as long as they entered my awareness—' What kind of Chinese is that?

A: [ *Nervously.* ] Keep going, keep going!

B: '... for as long as they entered my awareness, and that in either case, I mean whether such on the one hand as to give me pleasure or on the contrary on the other to cause me pain, and truth to tell—' Shit! Where's the verb?

A: What verb?

B: The main!

A: I give up.

B: Hold on till I find the verb and to hell with all this drivel in the middle. [ *Reading.* ] '... were I but ... could I but ...' —Jesus!—'... though it be ... be it but ...'—Christ!—ah! I have it—'... I was unfortunately incapable ...' Done it!

A: How does it run now?

B: [ *Solemnly.* ] '... morbidly sensitive to the opinion of others at the time ...'—drivel drivel drivel—'... I was unfortunately incapable—'  
[ *The lamp goes out. Long pause.* ]

A: Would you care to change seats? [ *Pause.* ] You see what I mean? [ *Pause.* ] That you come over here with your papers and I go over there. [ *Pause.* ] Don't whinge, Morvan, that will get us nowhere.

B: It's my nerves. [ *Pause.* ] Ah if I were only twenty years younger I'd put an end to my sufferings!

A: Fie! Never say such horrid things! Even to a well-wisher!

B: May I come to you? *[Pause.]* I need animal warmth. *[Pause.]*

A: *[Coldly.]* As you like. *[B gets up and goes towards A.]* With your files if you don't mind. *[B goes back for papers and briefcase, returns towards A, puts them on A's table, remains standing. Pause.]* Do you want me to take you on my knees?

*[Pause. B goes back for his chair, returns towards A, stops before A's table with the chair in his arms. Pause.]*

B: *[Shyly.]* May I sit beside you? *[They look at each other.]* No? *[Pause.]* Then opposite. *[He sits down opposite A, looks at him. Pause.]* Do we continue?

A: *[Forcibly.]* Let's get it over and go to bed.

*[B rummages in his papers.]*

B: I'll take the lamp. *[He draws it towards him.]* Please God it holds out. What would we do in the dark the pair of us? *[Pause.]* Have you matches?

A: Never without. *[Pause.]* What we would do? Go and stand by the window in the starlight. *[B's lamp goes on again.]* That is to say you would.

B: *[Fervently.]* Oh no not alone I wouldn't!

A: Pass me a sheet. *[B passes him a sheet.]* Switch off.

*[B switches off.]* Oh lord, yours is on again.

B: This gag has gone on long enough for me.

A: Just so. Go and switch it off.

*[B goes to his table, switches off his lamp. Pause.]*

B: What am I to do now? Switch it on again?

A: Come back.

B: Switch on then till I see where I'm going.

*[A switches on. B goes back and sits down opposite A.]*

*A switches off, goes to window with sheet, halts, contemplates the sky.]*

A: And to think all that is nuclear combustion! All that faerie! *[He stoops over sheet and reads haltingly.]* 'Aged ten, runs away from home first time, brought back next day, admonished, forgiven.' *[Pause.]* 'Aged fifteen, runs away from home second time, dragged back a week later, thrashed, forgiven.' *[Pause.]* 'Aged seventeen, runs away from home third time, slinks back six months later with his tail between his legs, locked up, forgiven.' *[Pause.]*

'Aged seventeen runs away from home last time, crawls back a year later on his hands and knees, kicked out, forgiven.'

[Pause. He moves up against window to inspect c's face, to do which he has to lean out a little way, with his back to the void.]

B: Careful!

[Long pause, all three dead still.]

A: [Sadly.] Tsstss! [He resumes his equilibrium.] Switch on.

[B switches on. A goes back to his table, sits, returns the sheet to B.] It's heavy going, but we're nearly home.

B: How does he look?

A: Not at his best.

B: Has he still got that little smile on his face?

A: Probably.

B: What do you mean, probably, haven't you just been looking at him?

A: He didn't have it then.

B: [With satisfaction.] Ah! [Pause.] Could never make out what he thought he was doing with that smile on his face. And his eyes? Still goggling?

A: Shut.

B: Shut!

A: Oh it was only so as not to see me. He must have opened them again since. [Pause. Violently.] You'd need to stare them in the face day and night! Never take your eyes off them for a week on end! Unbeknownst to them! [Pause.]

B: Looks to me we have him.

A: [Impatiently.] Come on, we're getting nowhere, get on with it. [B rummages in his papers, finds the sheet.]

B: [Reading at top speed.] '... morbidly sensitive to the opinion of others at the time ...'—drivel drivel drive!—'... I was unfortunately incapable of retaining it for more than ten or fifteen minutes at the most, that is to say the time required to take it in. From then on it might as well never have been uttered.' [Pause.] Tsstss!

A: [With satisfaction.] You see. [Pause.] Where does that come in?

B: In a letter presumably never posted to an anonymous admiratrix.

A: An admiratrix? He had admiratrixes?

B: It begins: 'Dear friend and admiratrix . . .' That's all we know.

A: Come, Morvan, calm yourself, letters to admiratrixes, we all know what they're worth. No need to take everything literally.

B: [*Violently, slapping down his hand on the pile of papers.*]

There's the record, closed and final. That's what we're going on. Too late now to start saying that [*slapping to his left*] is right and that [*slapping to his right*] wrong. You're a pain in the arse.

[*Pause.*]

A: Good. Let us sum up.

B: We do nothing else.

A: A black future, an unpardonable past—so far as he can remember, inducements to linger on all equally preposterous and the best advice dead letter. Agreed?

B: An heirless aunt preposterous?

A: [*Warmly.*] He's not the interested type. [*Sternly.*] One has to consider the client's temperament. To accumulate documents is not enough.

B: [*Vexed, slapping on his papers.*] Here, as far as I'm concerned the client is here and nowhere else.

A: All right. Is there a single reference there to personal gain? That old aunt, was he ever as much as commonly civil to her? And that dairy-woman, come to that, in all the years he's been going to her for his bit of cheddar, was he ever once wanting in respect? [*Pause.*] No, Morvan, look you—[*Feeble miaow. Pause. Second miaow, louder.*]

B: That must be the cat.

A: Sounds like it. [*Long pause.*] So, agreed? Black future, unpardonable—

B: As you wish. [*He starts to tidy back the papers in the briefcase. Wearily.*] Let him jump.

A: No further exhibit?

B: Let him jump, let him jump. [*He finishes tidying, gets up with the briefcase in his hand.*] Let's go.  
[*A consults his watch.*]

A: It is now . . . ten . . . twenty-five. We have no train before eleven twenty. Let us kill the time here, talking of this and that.

B: What do you mean, eleven twenty? Ten fifty.

[A takes a time-table from his pocket, opens it at relevant page and hands it to B.]

A: Where it's marked with a cross. [B consults the time-table, hands it back to A and sits down again. Long pause. A clears his throat. Pause. Impassionately.] How many unfortunates would be so still today if they had known in time to what extent they were so? [Pause.] Remember Smith?

B: Smith? [Pause.] Never knew anyone of that name.

A: Yes you did! A big fat redhair. Always to be seen hanging round World's End. Hadn't done a hand's turn for years. Reputed to have lost his genitals in a shooting accident. His own double-barrel that went off between his legs in a moment of abstraction, just as he was getting set to let fly at a quail.

B: Stranger to me.

A: Well to make a long story short he had his head in the oven when they came to tell him his wife had gone under an ambulance. Hell, says he, I can't miss that, and now he has a steady job in Marks and Spencer's. [Pause.] How is Mildred?

B: [Disgustedly.] Oh you know— [Brief burst of birdsong. Pause.] Good God!

A: Philomel!

B: Oh that put the heart across me!

A: Hsst! [Low.] Hark hark! [Pause. Second brief burst, louder. Pause.] It's in the room! [He gets up, moves away on tiptoe.] Come on, let's have a look.

B: I'm scared!

[He gets up none the less and follows cautiously in the wake of A. A advances on tiptoe upstage right, B tiptoes after.]

A: [Turning.] Hsst! [They advance, halt in the corner. A strikes a match, holds it above his head. Pause. Low.] She's not here. [He drops the match and crosses the stage on tiptoe followed on tiptoe by B. They pass before the window, halt in the corner upstage left. Match as before. Pause.] Here she is!

B: [Recoiling.] Where?

[A *squats. Pause.*]

A: Lend me a hand.

B: Let her be! [A *straightens up painfully, clutching to his belly a large birdcage covered with a green silk cloth fringed with beads. He starts to stagger with it towards the table.*] Give it here.

[B *helps to carry the cage. Holding it between them they advance warily towards A's table.*]

A: [Breathing hard.] Hold on a second. [They halt. Pause.]

Let's go. [They move on, set down cage gently on the table. A lifts cautiously the cloth on the side away from the audience, peers. Pause.] Show a light.

[B takes up the lamp and shines it inside the cage. They peer, stooped. Long pause.]

B: There's one dead.

[They peer.]

A: Have you a pencil? [B hands him a long pencil. A pokes it between the bars of the cage. Pause.] Yes. [He withdraws the pencil, puts it in his pocket.]

B: Hi!

[A gives him back his pencil. They peer. A takes B's hand and changes its position.]

A: There.

[They peer.]

B: Is it the cock or the hen?

A: The hen. See how drab she is.

B: [Revolted.] And he goes on singing! [Pause.] There's lovebirds for you!

A: Lovebirds! [Guffaw.] Ah Morvan, you'd be the death of me if I were sufficiently alive! Lovebirds! [Guffaw.] Finches, pinhead! Look at that lovely little green rump! And the blue cap! And the white bars! And the gold breast! [Didactic.] Note moreover the characteristic warble, there can be no mistaking it. [Pause.] Oh you pretty little pet, oh you bonny wee birdie! [Pause. Glum.] And to think all that is organic waste! All that splendour! [They peer]

B: They have no seed. [Pause.] No water. [Pointing.] What's that there?

A: That? [*Pause. Slow, toneless.*] An old cuttle-bone.

B: Cuttle-bone?

A: Cuttle-bone.

[*He lets the cloth fall back. Pause.*]

B: Come, Bertrand, don't, there is nothing we can do. [*A takes up the cage and goes with it upstage left. B puts down the lamp and hastens after him.*] Give it here.

A: Leave it, leave it! [*He advances to the corner, followed by B, and puts down the cage where he found it. He straightens up and moves back towards his table, still followed by B. A stops short.*] Will you have done dogging me! Do you want me to jump too? [*Pause. B goes to A's table, takes up briefcase and chair, goes to his table and sits with back to window. He switches on his lamp, switches it off again immediately.*] How end? [*Long pause. A goes to window; strikes a match, holds it high and inspects C's face. The match burns out, he throws it out of window.*] Hi! Take a look at this! [*B does not move. A strikes another match, holds it high and inspects C's face.*] Come on! Quick! [*B does not move. The match burns out, A lets it fall.*] Well I'll be . . . !

[*A takes out his handkerchief and raises it timidly towards C's face.*]

CURTAIN





# Embers

A piece for radio

Written in English and completed at the beginning of 1959.  
First published in *Evergreen Review* (Nov./Dec. 1959). First  
broadcast on the BBC Third Programme on 24 June 1959.

*Sea scarcely audible.*

HENRY's boots on shingle. He halts.

*Sea a little louder.*

HENRY: On. [*Sea. Voice louder.*] On! [*He moves on. Boots on shingle. As he goes.*] Stop. [*Boots on shingle. As he goes, louder.*] Stop! [*He halts. Sea a little louder.*] Down. [*Sea. Voice louder.*] Down! [*Slither of shingle as he sits. Sea, still faint, audible throughout what follows whenever pause indicated.*] Who is beside me now? [*Pause.*] An old man, blind and foolish. [*Pause.*] My father, back from the dead, to be with me. [*Pause.*] As if he hadn't died. [*Pause.*] No, simply back from the dead, to be with me, in this strange place. [*Pause.*] Can he hear me? [*Pause.*] Yes, he must hear me. [*Pause.*] To answer me? [*Pause.*] No, he doesn't answer me. [*Pause.*] Just be with me. [*Pause.*] That sound you hear is the sea. [*Pause. Louder.*] I say that sound you hear is the sea, we are sitting on the strand. [*Pause.*] I mention it because the sound is so strange, so unlike the sound of the sea, that if you didn't see what it was you wouldn't know what it was. [*Pause.*] Hooves! [*Pause. Louder.*] Hooves! [*Sound of hooves walking on hard road. They die rapidly away. Pause.*] Again! [*Hooves as before. Pause. Excitedly.*] Train it to mark time! Shoe it with steel and tie it up in the yard, have it stamp all day! [*Pause.*] A ten-ton mammoth back from the dead, shoe it with steel and have it tramp the world down! Listen to it! [*Pause.*] Listen to the light now, you always loved light, not long past noon and all the shore in shadow and the sea out as far as the island. [*Pause.*] You would never live this side of the bay, you wanted the sun on the water for that evening bathe you took once too often. But when I got your money I moved across, as perhaps you may know. [*Pause.*] We never

found your body, you know, that held up probate an unconscionable time, they said there was nothing to prove you hadn't run away from us all and alive and well under a false name in the Argentine for example, that grieved mother greatly. [*Pause.*] I'm like you in that, can't stay away from it, but I never go in, no, I think the last time I went in was with you. [*Pause.*] Just be near it. [*Pause.*] Today it's calm, but I often hear it above in the house and walking the roads and start talking, oh just loud enough to drown it, nobody notices. [*Pause.*] But I'd be talking now no matter where I was, I once went to Switzerland to get away from the cursed thing and never stopped all the time I was there. [*Pause.*] I usen't to need anyone, just to myself, stories, there was a great one about an old fellow called Bolton, I never finished it, I never finished any of them, I never finished anything, everything always went on for ever. [*Pause.*] Bolton [*Pause. Louder.*] Bolton! [*Pause.*] There before the fire. [*Pause.*] Before the fire with all the shutters . . . no, hangings, hangings, all the hangings drawn and the light, no light, only the light of the fire, sitting there in the . . . no, standing, standing there on the hearth-rug in the dark before the fire with his arms on the chimney-piece and his head on his arms, standing there waiting in the dark before the fire in his old red dressing-gown and no sound in the house of any kind, only the sound of the fire. [*Pause.*] Standing there in his old red dressing-gown might go on fire any minute like when he was a child, no, that was his pyjamas, standing there waiting in the dark, no light, only the light of the fire, and no sound of any kind, only the fire, an old man in great trouble. [*Pause.*] Ring then at the door and over he goes to the window and looks out between the hangings, fine old chap, very big and strong, bright winter's night, snow everywhere, bitter cold, white world, cedar boughs bending under load and then as the arm goes up to ring again recognizes . . . Holloway . . . [*Long pause.*] . . . yes, Holloway, recognizes Holloway, goes down and opens. [*Pause.*] Outside all still, not a sound, dog's chain maybe or a bough groaning if you stood there listening long

enough, white world, Holloway with his little black bag, not a sound, bitter cold, full moon small and white, crooked trail of Holloway's galoshes, Vega in the Lyre very green. [Pause.] Vega in the Lyre very green. [Pause.]

Following conversation then on the step, no, in the room, back in the room, following conversation then back in the room, Holloway: 'My dear Bolton, it is now past midnight, if you would be good enough—', gets no further, Bolton: 'Please! PLEASE!' Dead silence then, not a sound, only the fire, all coal, burning down now, Holloway on the hearthrug trying to toast his arse, Bolton, where's Bolton, no light, only the fire, Bolton at the window his back to the hangings, holding them a little apart with his hand looking out, white world, even the spire, white to the vane, most unusual, silence in the house, not a sound, only the fire, no flames now, embers. [Pause.] Embers. [Pause.]

Shifting, lapsing, furtive like, dreadful sound, Holloway on the rug, fine old chap, six foot, burly, legs apart, hands behind his back holding up the tails of his old macfarlane, Bolton at the window, grand old figure in his old red dressing-gown, back against the hangings, hand stretched out widening the chink, looking out, white world great trouble, not a sound, only the embers, sound of dying, dying glow, Holloway, Bolton, Bolton, Holloway, old men, great trouble, white world, not a sound. [Pause.]

Listen to it! [Pause.] Close your eyes and listen to it, what would you think it was? [Pause. Vehement.] A drip! A drip! [Sound of drip, rapidly amplified, suddenly cut off.] Again! [Drip again. Amplification begins.] No! [Drip cut off. Pause.] Father! [Pause. Agitated.] Stories, stories, years and years of stories, till the need came on me, for someone, to be with me, anyone, a stranger, to talk to, imagine he hears me, years of that, and then, now, for someone who . . . knew me, in the old days, anyone, to be with me, imagine he hears me, what I am, now.

[Pause.] No good either. [Pause.] Not there either.

[Pause.] Try again. [Pause.] White world, not a sound.

[Pause.] Holloway. [Pause.] Holloway says he'll go, damned if he'll sit up all night before a black grate, doesn't

understand, call a man out, an old friend, in the cold and dark, an old friend, urgent need, bring the bag, then not a word, no explanation no heat, no light, Bolton: 'Please! PLEASE!' Holloway, no refreshment, no welcome, chilled to the medulla, catch his death, can't understand, strange treatment, old friend, says he'll go, doesn't move, not a sound, fire dying, white beam from window, ghastly scene, wishes to God he hadn't come, no good, fire out, bitter cold, great trouble, white world, not a sound, no good. [Pause.] No good. [Pause.] Can't do it. [Pause.] Listen to it! [Pause.] Father! [Pause.] You wouldn't know me now, you'd be sorry you ever had me, but you were that already, a washout, that's the last I heard from you, a washout. [Pause. *Imitating father's voice.*] 'Are you coming for a dip?' 'No.' 'Come on, come on.' 'No.' Glare, stump to door, turn, glare. 'A washout, that's all you are, a washout!' [Violent slam of door. Pause.] Again! [Slam. Pause.] Slam life shut like that! [Pause.] Washout. [Pause.] Wish to Christ she had. [Pause.] Never met Ada, did you, or did you, I can't remember, no matter, no one'd know her now. [Pause.] What turned her against me do you think, the child I suppose, horrid little creature, wish to God we'd never had her, I use to walk with her in the fields, Jesus that was awful, she wouldn't let go my hand and I mad to talk. 'Run along now, Addie, and look at the lambs.' [Imitating ADDIE's voice.] 'No papa.' 'Go on now, go on.' [Plaintive.] 'No papa.' [Violent.] 'Go on with you when you're told and look at the lambs!' [ADDIE's loud wail. Pause.] Ada too, conversation with her, that was something, that's what hell will be like, small chat to the babbling of Lethe about the good old days when we wished we were dead. [Pause.] Price of margarine fifty years ago. [Pause.] And now. [Pause. *With solemn indignation.*] Price of blueband now! [Pause.] Father! [Pause.] Tired of talking to you. [Pause.] That was always the way, walk all over the mountains with you talking and talking and then suddenly mum and home in misery and not a word to a soul for weeks, sulky little bastard, better off dead. [Long pause.] Ada. [Pause. *Louder.*] Ada!

ADA: [*Low remote voice throughout.*] Yes.

HENRY: Have you been there long?

ADA: Some little time. [*Pause.*] Why do you stop, don't mind me. [*Pause.*] Do you want me to go away? [*Pause.*] Where is Addie?  
[*Pause.*]

HENRY: With her music master. [*Pause.*] Are you going to answer me today?

ADA: You shouldn't be sitting on the cold stones, they're bad for your growths. Raise yourself up till I slip my shawl under you. [*Pause.*] Is that better?

HENRY: No comparison, no comparison. [*Pause.*] Are you going to sit down beside me?

ADA: Yes. [*No sound as she sits.*] Like that? [*Pause.*] Or do you prefer like that? [*Pause.*] You don't care. [*Pause.*] Chilly enough I imagine, I hope you put on your jaegers. [*Pause.*] Did you put on your jaegers, Henry?

HENRY: What happened was this, I put them on and then I took them off again and then I put them on again and then I took them off again and then I took them on again and then I—

ADA: Have you them on now?

HENRY: I don't know. [*Pause.*] Hooves! [*Pause. Louder.*] Hooves! [*Sound of hooves walking on hard road. They die rapidly away.*] Again!  
[*Hooves as before. Pause.*]

ADA: Did you hear them?

HENRY: Not well.

ADA: Galloping?

HENRY: No. [*Pause.*] Could a horse mark time?  
[*Pause.*]

ADA: I'm not sure that I know what you mean.

HENRY: [*Irritably.*] Could a horse be trained to stand still and mark time with its four legs?

ADA: Oh. [*Pause.*] The ones I used to fancy all did. [*She laughs. Pause.*] Laugh, Henry, it's not every day I crack a joke. [*Pause.*] Laugh, Henry do that for me.

HENRY: You wish *me* to laugh?

ADA: You laughed so charmingly once, I think that's what



first attracted me to you. That and your smile. [*Pause.*]  
Come on, it will be like old times.

[*Pause. He tries to laugh, fails.*]

HENRY: Perhaps I should begin with the smile. [*Pause for smile.*]  
Did that attract you? [*Pause.*] Now I'll try again. [*Long horrible laugh.*] Any of the old charm there?

ADA: Oh Henry!  
[*Pause.*]

HENRY: Listen to it! [*Pause.*] Lips and claws! [*Pause.*] Get away from it! Where it couldn't get at me! The Pampas! What?

ADA: Calm yourself.

HENRY: And I live on the brink of it! Why? Professional obligations? [*Brief laugh.*] Reasons of health? [*Brief laugh.*] Family ties? [*Brief laugh.*] A woman? [*Laugh in which she joins.*] Some old grave I cannot tear myself away from? [*Pause.*] Listen to it! What is it like?

ADA: It is like an old sound I used to hear. [*Pause.*] It is like another time, in the same place. [*Pause.*] It was rough, the spray came flying over us. [*Pause.*] Strange it should have been rough then [*Pause.*] And calm now.  
[*Pause.*]

HENRY: Let us get up and go.

ADA: Go? Where? And Addie? She would be very distressed if she came and found you had gone without her. [*Pause.*]  
What do you suppose is keeping her?  
[*Smart blow of cylindrical ruler on piano case. Unsteadily, ascending and descending, ADDIE plays scale of A Flat Major, hands first together, then reversed. Pause.*]

MUSIC MASTER: [*Italian accent.*] Santa Cecilia!  
[*Pause.*]

ADDIE: Will I play my piece now please?

[*Pause. MUSIC MASTER beats two bars of waltz time with ruler on piano case. ADDIE plays opening bars of Chopin's 5th Waltz in A Flat Major, MUSIC MASTER beating time lightly with ruler as she plays. In first chord of bass, bar 5, she plays E instead of F. Resounding blow of ruler on piano case. ADDIE stops playing.*]

MUSIC MASTER: [*Violently.*] Fa!

ADDIE: [*Tearfully.*] What?

MUSIC MASTER: [*Violently.*] Eff! Eff!

ADDIE: [*Tearfully.*] Where?

MUSIC MASTER: [*Violently.*] Qua! [*He thumps note.*] Fa!

[*Pause. ADDIE begins again, MUSIC MASTER beating time lightly with ruler. When she comes to bar 5 she makes same mistake. Tremendous blow of ruler on piano case.*

ADDIE stops playing, begins to wail.]

MUSIC MASTER: [*Frenziedly.*] Eff! Eff! [*He hammers note.*] Eff!

[*He hammers note.*] Eff!

[*Hammered note, 'Eff!' and ADDIE's wail amplified to paroxysm, then suddenly cut off. Pause.*]

ADA: You are silent today.

HENRY: It was not enough to drag her into the world, now she must play the piano.

ADA: She must learn. She shall learn. That—and riding.

[*Hooves walking.*]

RIDING MASTER: Now Miss! Elbows in Miss! Hands down Miss!

[*Hooves trotting.*] Now Miss! Back straight Miss! Knees in

Miss! [*Hooves cantering.*] Now Miss! Tummy in Miss! Chin up Miss! [*Hooves galloping.*] Now Miss! Eyes front Miss!

[*ADDIE begins to wail.*] Now Miss! Now Miss!

[*Galloping hooves, 'Now Miss!' and ADDIE's wail amplified to paroxysm, then suddenly cut off. Pause.*]

ADA: What are you thinking of? [*Pause.*] I was never taught, until it was too late. All my life I regretted it.

HENRY: What was your strong point, I forget.

ADA: Oh . . . geometry I suppose, plane and solid. [*Pause.*] First plane, then solid. [*Shingle as he gets up.*] Why do you get up?

HENRY: I thought I might try and get as far as the water's edge.

[*Pause. With a sigh.*] And back. [*Pause.*] Stretch my old bones.

[*Pause.*]

ADA: Well, why don't you? [*Pause.*] Don't stand there thinking about it. [*Pause.*] Don't stand there staring. [*Pause. He goes towards sea. Boots on shingle, say ten steps. He halts at water's edge. Pause. Sea a little louder. Distant.*] Don't wet your good boots.

[*Pause.*]

HENRY: Don't, don't . . . .

[*Sea suddenly rough.*]

ADA: [*Twenty years earlier, imploring.*] Don't! Don't!

HENRY: [*Ditto, urgent.*] Darling!

ADA: [*Ditto, more feebly.*] Don't!

HENRY: [*Ditto, exultantly.*] Darling!

[*Rough sea. ADA cries out. Cry and sea amplified, cut off. End of evocation. Pause. Sea calm. He goes back up deeply shelving beach. Boots laborious on shingle. He halts. Pause. He moves on. He halts. Pause. Sea calm and faint.*]

ADA: Don't stand there gaping. Sit down. [*Pause. Shingle as he sits.*] On the shawl. [*Pause.*] Are you afraid we might touch? [*Pause.*] Henry.

HENRY: Yes.

ADA: You should see a doctor about your talking, it's worse, what must it be like for Addie? [*Pause.*] Do you know what she said to me once, when she was still quite small, she said, Mummy, why does Daddy keep on talking all the time? She heard you in the lavatory. I didn't know what to answer.

HENRY: Daddy! Addie! [*Pause.*] I told you to tell her I was praying. [*Pause.*] Roaring prayers at God and his saints.

ADA: It's very bad for the child. [*Pause.*] It's silly to say it keeps you from hearing it, it doesn't keep you from hearing it and even if it does you shouldn't be hearing it, there must be something wrong with your brain. [*Pause.*]

HENRY: That! I shouldn't be hearing that!

ADA: I don't think you are hearing it. And if you are what's wrong with it, it's a lovely peaceful gentle soothing sound, why do you hate it? [*Pause.*] And if you hate it why don't you keep away from it? Why are you always coming down here? [*Pause.*] There's something wrong with your brain, you ought to see Holloway, he's alive still, isn't he? [*Pause.*]

HENRY: [*Wildly.*] Thuds, I want thuds! Like this! [*He fumbles in the shingle, catches up two big stones and starts dashing them together.*] Stone! [*Clash.*] Stone! [*Clash. 'Stone!' and clash amplified, cut off. Pause. He throws one stone away. Sound of its fall.*] That's life! [*He throws the other stone*

*away. Sound of its fall.*] Not this . . . [*Pause.*] . . . sucking!

ADA: And why life? [*Pause.*] Why life, Henry? [*Pause.*] Is there anyone about?

HENRY: Not a living soul.

ADA: I thought as much. [*Pause.*] When we longed to have it to ourselves there was always someone. Now that it does not matter the place is deserted.

HENRY: Yes, you were always very sensitive to being seen in gallant conversation. The least feather of smoke on the horizon and you adjusted your dress and became immersed in the *Manchester Guardian*. [*Pause.*] The hole is still there, after all these years. [*Pause. Louder.*] The hole is still there.

ADA: What hole? The earth is full of holes.

HENRY: Where we did it at last for the first time.

ADA: Ah yes, I think I remember. [*Pause.*] The place has not changed.

HENRY: Oh yes it has, *I* can see it. [*Confidentially.*] There is a levelling going on! [*Pause.*] What age is she now?

ADA: I have lost count of time.

HENRY: Twelve? Thirteen? [*Pause.*] Fourteen?

ADA: I really could not tell you, Henry.

HENRY: It took us a long time to have her. [*Pause.*] Years we kept hammering away at it. [*Pause.*] But we did it in the end. [*Pause. Sigh.*] We had her in the end. [*Pause.*] Listen to it! [*Pause.*] It's not so bad when you get out on it. [*Pause.*] Perhaps I should have gone into the merchant navy.

ADA: It's only on the surface, you know. Underneath all is as quiet as the grave. Not a sound. All day, all night, not a sound. [*Pause.*]

HENRY: Now I walk about with the gramophone. But I forgot it today.

ADA: There is no sense in that. [*Pause.*] There is no sense in trying to drown it. [*Pause.*] See Holloway. [*Pause.*]

HENRY: Let us go for a row.

ADA: A row? And Addie? She would be very distressed if she came and found you had gone for a row without her. [*Pause.*] Who were you with just now? [*Pause.*] Before you spoke to me.

HENRY: I was trying to be with my father.

ADA: Oh. *[Pause.]* No difficulty about that.

HENRY: I mean I was trying to get him to be with me. *[Pause.]*  
You seem a little cruder than usual today, Ada. *[Pause.]* I  
was asking him if he had ever met you, I couldn't remember.

ADA: Well?

HENRY: He doesn't answer any more.

ADA: I suppose you have worn him out. *[Pause.]* You wore him  
out living and now you are wearing him out dead. *[Pause.]*  
The time comes when one cannot speak to you any more.  
*[Pause.]* The time will come when no one will speak to you  
at all, not even complete strangers. *[Pause.]* You will be  
quite alone with your voice, there will be no other voice in  
the world but yours. *[Pause.]* Do you hear me?  
*[Pause.]*

HENRY: I can't remember if he met you.

ADA: You know he met me.

HENRY: No, Ada, I don't know, I'm sorry, I have forgotten  
almost everything connected with you.

ADA: You weren't there. Just your mother and sister. I had called  
to fetch you, as arranged. We were to go bathing together.  
*[Pause.]*

HENRY: *[Irritably.]* Drive on, drive on! Why do people always  
stop in the middle of what they are saying?

ADA: None of them knew where you were. Your bed had not  
been slept in. They were all shouting at one another. Your  
sister said she would throw herself off the cliff. Your father  
got up and went out, slamming the door. I left soon after-  
wards and passed him on the road. He did not see me. He  
was sitting on a rock looking out to sea. I never forgot his  
posture. And yet it was a common one. You used to have  
it sometimes. Perhaps just the stillness, as if he had been  
turned to stone. I could never make it out.  
*[Pause.]*

HENRY: Keep on, keep on! *[Imploringly.]* Keep it going, Ada,  
every syllable is a second gained.

ADA: That's all, I'm afraid. *[Pause.]* Go on now with your father  
or your stories or whatever you were doing, don't mind me  
any more.

HENRY: I can't! [*Pause.*] I can't do it any more!

ADA: You were doing it a moment ago, before you spoke to me.

HENRY: [*Angrily.*] I can't do it any more now! [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Pause.*]

ADA: Yes, you know what I mean, there are attitudes remain in one's mind for reasons that are clear, the carriage of a head for example, bowed when one would have thought it should be lifted, and vice versa, or a hand suspended in mid-air, as if unowned. That kind of thing. But with your father sitting on the rock that day nothing of the kind, no detail you could put your finger on and say, How very peculiar! No, I could never make it out. Perhaps, as I said, just the great stillness of the whole body, as if all the breath had left it. [*Pause.*] Is this rubbish a help to you, Henry? [*Pause.*] I can try and go on a little if you wish. [*Pause.*] No? [*Pause.*] Then I think I'll be getting back.

HENRY: Not yet! You needn't speak. Just listen. Not even. Be with me. [*Pause.*] Ada! [*Pause. Louder.*] Ada! [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Pause.*] Hooves! [*Pause. Louder.*] Hooves! [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Long pause.*] Left soon afterwards, passed you on the road, didn't see her, looking out to . . . [*Pause.*] Can't have been looking out to sea. [*Pause.*] Unless you had gone round the other side. [*Pause.*] Had you gone round the cliff side? [*Pause.*] Father! [*Pause.*] Must have I suppose. [*Pause.*] Stands watching you a moment, then on down path to tram, up on open top and sits down in front. [*Pause.*] Sits down in front. [*Pause.*] Suddenly feels uneasy and gets down again, conductor: 'Changed your mind, Miss?', goes back up path, no sign of you. [*Pause.*] Very unhappy and uneasy, hangs round a bit, not a soul about, cold wind coming in off sea, goes back down path and takes tram home. [*Pause.*] Takes tram home. [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Pause.*] 'My dear Bolton . . .' [*Pause.*] 'If it's an injection you want, Bolton, let down your trousers and I'll give you one, I have a panhysterectomy at nine,' meaning of course the anaesthetic. [*Pause.*] Fire out, bitter cold, white world, great trouble, not a sound. [*Pause.*] Bolton starts playing with the curtain, no, hanging, difficult to describe, draws it back no, kind of gathers it towards him and the moon comes

flooding in, then lets it fall back, heavy velvet affair, and pitch black in the room, then towards him again, white, black, white, black, Holloway: 'Stop that for the love of God, Bolton, do you want to finish me?' [*Pause.*] Black, white, black, white, maddening thing. [*Pause.*] Then he suddenly strikes a match, Bolton does, lights a candle, catches it up above his head, walks over and looks Holloway full in the eye. [*Pause.*] Not a word, just the look, the old blue eye, very glassy, lids worn thin, lashes gone, whole thing swimming, and the candle shaking over his head. [*Pause.*] Tears? [*Pause. Long laugh.*] Good God no! [*Pause.*] Not a word, just the look, the old blue eye, Holloway: 'If you want a shot say so and let me get to hell out of here.' [*Pause.*] 'We've had this before, Bolton, don't ask me to go through it again.' [*Pause.*] Bolton: 'Please!' [*Pause.*] 'Please!' [*Pause.*] 'Please, Holloway!' [*Pause.*] Candle shaking and guttering all over the place, lower now, old arm tired takes it in the other hand and holds it high again, that's it, that was always it, night, and the embers cold, and the glim shaking in your old fist, saying, Please! Please! [*Pause.*] Begging. [*Pause.*] Of the poor. [*Pause.*] Ada! [*Pause.*] Father! [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Pause.*] Holds it high again, naughty world, fixes Holloway, eyes drowned, won't ask again, just the look, Holloway covers his face, not a sound, white world, bitter cold, ghastly scene, old men, great trouble, no good. [*Pause.*] No good. [*Pause.*] Christ! [*Pause. Shingle as he gets up. He goes towards sea. Boots on shingle. He halts. Pause. Sea a little louder.*] On. [*Pause. He moves on. Boots on shingle. He halts at water's edge. Pause. Sea a little louder.*] Little book. [*Pause.*] This evening . . . [*Pause.*] Nothing this evening. [*Pause.*] Tomorrow . . . tomorrow . . . plumber at nine, then nothing. [*Pause. Puzzled.*] Plumber at nine? [*Pause.*] Ah yes, the waste. [*Pause.*] Words. [*Pause.*] Saturday . . . nothing. Sunday . . . Sunday . . . nothing all day. [*Pause.*] Nothing, all day nothing. [*Pause.*] All day all night nothing. [*Pause.*] Not a sound.

**Rough for Radio I**



Written in French in late 1961. First published in English as 'Sketch for Radio Play' in *Stereo Headphones*, no. 7 (Spring 1976).

HE: [*Gloomily.*] Madam.

SHE: Are you all right? [*Pause.*] You asked me to come.

HE: I ask no one to come here.

SHE: You suffered me to come.

HE: I meet my debts.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: I have come to listen.

HE: When you please.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: May I squat on this hassock? [*Pause.*] Thank you.

[*Pause.*] May we have a little heat?

HE: No, madam.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: Is it true the music goes on all the time?

HE: Yes.

SHE: Without cease?

HE: Without cease.

SHE: It's unthinkable! [*Pause.*] And the words too? All the time too?

HE: All the time.

SHE: Without cease?

HE: Yes.

SHE: It's unimaginable. [*Pause.*] So you are here all the time?

HE: Without cease.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: How troubled you look! [*Pause.*] May one see them?

HE: No, madam.

SHE: I may not go and see them?

HE: No, madam.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: May we have a little light?

HE: No, madam.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: How cold you are! [*Pause.*] Are these the two knobs?

HE: Yes.

SHE: Just push? [*Pause.*] Is it live? [*Pause.*] I ask you is it live.

HE: No, you must twist. [*Pause.*] To the right.

[*Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Faint.*] . . . . .

[*Silence.*]

SHE: [*Astonished.*] But there are more than one!

HE: Yes.

SHE: How many?

[*Pause.*]

HE: To the right, madam, to the right.

[*Click.*]

VOICE: [*Faint.*] . . . . .

SHE: [*With voice.*] Louder!

VOICE: [*No louder.*] . . . . .

[*Silence.*]

SHE: [*Astonished.*] But he is alone!

HE: Yes.

SHE: All alone?

HE: When one is alone one is all alone.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: What is it like together?

[*Pause.*]

HE: To the right, madam.

[*Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Faint, brief.*] . . . . .

MUSIC: ] [*Together.*] . . . . .

[*Silence.*]

SHE: They are not together?

HE: No.

SHE: They cannot see each other?

HE: No.

SHE: Hear each other?

HE: No.

SHE: It's inconceivable!

[*Pause.*]

HE: To the right, madam.

[Click.]

VOICE: [*Faint.*] . . . . .

SHE: [*With voice.*] Louder!

VOICE: [*No louder.*] . . . . .

[*Silence.*]

SHE: And—[*Faint stress.*—]—you like that?

HE: It is a need.

SHE: A need? *That* a need?

HE: It has become a need. [*Pause.*] To the right, madam.

[Click.]

MUSIC: [*Faint.*] . . . . .

SHE: [*With music.*] Louder!

MUSIC: [*No louder.*] . . . . .

[*Silence.*]

SHE: That too? [*Pause.*] That a need too?

HE: It has become a need, madam.

SHE: Are they in the same . . . situation?

[*Pause.*]

HE: I don't understand.

SHE: Are they . . . subject to the same . . . conditions?

HE: Yes, madam.

SHE: For instance? [*Pause.*] For instance?

HE: One cannot describe them, madam.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: Well, I'm obliged to you.

HE: Allow me, this way.

[*Pause.*]

SHE: [*A little off.*] Is that a Turkoman?

HE: [*Ditto.*] Allow me.

SHE: [*A little further off.*] How troubled you look! [*Pause.*]

Well, I'll leave you. [*Pause.*] To your needs.

HE: [*Ditto.*] Good-bye, madam. [*Pause.*] To the right, madam,

that's the garbage—[*Faint stress.*—]—the *house* garbage.

[*Pause.*] Good-bye, madam.

[*Long pause. Sound of curtains violently drawn, first one, then the other, clatter of the heavy rings along the rods.*

*Pause. Faint ping—as sometimes happens—of telephone receiver raised from cradle. Faint sound of dialling. Pause.*]

Hello . . . Miss . . . is the doctor . . . ah . . . yes . . . he to call

me ... Macgillicuddy ... Mac-gilly-cuddy ... right ... he'll know ... and Miss ... Miss! ... urgent ... yes! ... [*Sbrill.*] ... most urgent!

[*Pause. Receiver put down with same faint ping. Pause. Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Faint.*] .....

HE: [*With music.*] Good God!

MUSIC: [*Faint.*] .....  
[*Silence. Pause. Click.*]

VOICE: [*Faint.*] .....

HE: [*With voice, shrill.*] Come on! Come on!

VOICE: [*Faint.*] .....  
[*Silence.*]

HE: [*Low.*] What'll I do? [*Pause. Faint ping of receiver raised again. Faint dialling. Pause.*] Hello ... Miss ... Macgillicuddy ... Mac-gilly-cuddy ... right ... I'm sorry but ... ah ... yes ... of course ... can't reach him ... no idea ... understand ... right ... immediately ... the moment he gets back ... what? ... [*Sbrill.*] ... yes! ... I told you so! ... most urgent! ... most urgent! ... [*Pause. Low.*] Slut! [*Sound of receiver put down violently. Pause. Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Faint. Brief.*] .....  
[*Silence. Click.*]

VOICE: [*Faint. Brief.*] .....

HE: [*With voice, shrill.*] It's crazy! Like one!

MUSIC: ] .....  
VOICE: ] [*Together.*] .....

[*Telephone rings. Receiver raised immediately, not more than a second's ring.*]

HE: [*With music and voice.*] Yes ... wait ... [*Music and voice silent. Very agitated.*] Yes ... yes ... no matter ... what the trouble is? ... they're ending ... ENDING ... this morning ... what? ... no! ... no question! ... ENDING I tell you ... nothing what? ... to be done? ... I know there's nothing to be done ... what? ... no! ... it's me ... ME ... what? I tell you they're ending ... ENDING ... I can't stay like that after ... who? ... but she's left me ... ah for God's sake ... haven't they all left me? ... did you not know that? ... all left me ... sure? ... of course I'm sure ...

what? ... in an hour? ... not before? ... wait ... [*Low.*]  
 ... there's more ... they're together ... TOGETHER ...  
 yes ... I don't know ... like ... [*Hesitation.*] ... one ...  
 the breathing ... I don't know ... [*Vehement.*] ... no! ...  
 never! ... meet? ... how could they meet? ... what? ...  
 what are all alike? ... last what? ... gasps? ... wait ...  
 don't go yet ... wait! ... [*Pause. Sound of receiver put  
 down violently. Low.*] Swine!  
 [*Pause. Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Failing.*] .....

MUSIC: ] [*Together, failing.*] .....

VOICE: ] [*Telephone rings. Receiver immediately raised.*]

HE: [*With music and voice.*] Miss ... what? ... [*Music and  
 voice silent.*] ... a confinement? ... [*Long pause.*] ... two  
 confinements? ... [*Long pause.*] ... one what? ... what? ...  
 breech? ... what? ... [*Long pause.*] ... tomorrow noon? ...  
 [*Long pause. Faint ping as receiver put gently down. Long  
 pause. Click.*]

MUSIC: [*Brief, failing.*] .....

MUSIC: ] [*Together, ending, breaking off together, resuming  
 VOICE: ] together more and more feebly.*] .....

[*Silence. Long pause.*]

HE: [*Whisper.*] Tomorrow ... noon ...



## Rough for Radio II



Written in French in the early 1960s. First published in English by Grove Press, New York, in 1976. First broadcast under the title 'Rough for Radio' on BBC Radio 3 on 13 April 1976.

ANIMATOR

STENOGRAPHER

FOX

DICK (mute)

- A: Ready, miss?
- s: And waiting, sir.
- A: Fresh pad, spare pencils?
- s: The lot, sir.
- A: Good shape?
- s: Tiptop, sir.
- A: And you, Dick, on your toes? [*Swish of bull's pizzle. Admiringly.*] Wow! Let's hear it land. [*Swish and formidable thud.*] Good. Off with his hood. [*Pause.*] Ravishing face, ravishing! Is it not, miss?
- s: Too true, sir. We know it by heart and yet the pang is ever new.
- A: The gag. [*Pause.*] The blind. [*Pause.*] The plugs. [*Pause.*] Good. [*He thumps on his desk with a cylindrical ruler.*] Fox, open your eyes, readjust them to the light of day and look about you. [*Pause.*] You see, the same old team. I hope--
- s: [*Aflutter.*] Oh!
- A: What is it, miss? Vermin in the lingerie?
- s: He smiled at me!
- A: Good omen. [*Faint hope.*] Not the first time by any chance?
- s: Heavens no, sir, what an idea!
- A: [*Disappointed.*] I might have known. [*Pause.*] And yet it still affects you?
- s: Why yes, sir, it is so sudden! So radiant! So fleeting!
- A: You note it?
- s: Oh no, sir, the words alone. [*Pause.*] Should one note the play of feature too?
- A: I don't know, miss. Depending perhaps.
- s: Me you know--
- A: [*Trenchant.*] Leave it for the moment. [*Thump with ruler.*] Fox, I hope you have had a refreshing night and will be better inspired today than heretofore. Miss.
- s: Sir.

A: Let us hear again the report on yesterday's results, it has somewhat slipped my memory.

S: [*Reading.*] 'We the undersigned, assembled under—'

A: Skip.

S: [*Reading.*] '...note yet again with pain that these dicta—'

A: Dicta! [*Pause.*] Read on.

S: '... with pain that these dicta, like all those communicated to date and by reason of the same deficiencies, are totally unacceptable. The second half in particular is of such—'

A: Skip.

S: '... outlook quite hopeless were it not for our conviction—'

A: Skip. [*Pause.*] Well?

S: That is all, sir.

A: ... same deficiencies ... totally unacceptable ... outlook quite hopeless ... [*Disgusted.*] Well! [*Pause.*] Well!

S: That is all, sir. Unless I am to read the exhortations.

A: Read them.

S: '... instantly renew our standing exhortations, namely:

1. Kindly to refrain from recording mere animal cries, they serve only to indispose us.

2. Kindly to provide a strictly literal transcript, the meanest syllable has, or may have, its importance.

3. Kindly to ensure full neutralization of the subject when not in session, especially with regard to the gag, its permanence and good repair. Thus rigid enforcement of the tube-feed, be it per buccam or be it on the other hand per rectum, is *absolutely*—one word underlined—'essential. The least word let fall in solitude and thereby in danger, as Mauthner has shown, of being no longer needed, *may be it*—three words underlined.

'4. Kindly—'

A: Enough! [*Sickened.*] Well! [*Pause.*] Well!

S: It is past two, sir.

A: [*Roused from his prostration.*] It is what?

S: Past two, sir.

A: [*Roughly.*] Then what are you waiting for? [*Pause. Gently.*] Forgive me, miss, forgive me, my cup is full. [*Pause.*] Forgive me!

S: [*Coldly.*] Shall I open with yesterday's close?

A: If you would be so good.

S: [*Reading.*] 'When I had done soaping the mole, thoroughly rinsing and drying before the embers, what next only out again in the blizzard and put him back in his chamber with his weight of grubs, at that instant his little heart was beating still I swear, ah my God my God.' [*She strikes with her pencil on her desk.*] 'My God.'  
[*Pause.*]

A: Unbelievable! And there he jibbed, if I remember aright.

S: Yes, sir, he would say no more.

A: Dick functioned?

S: Let me see . . . Yes, twice.

[*Pause.*]

A: Does not the glare incommode you, miss, what if we should let down the blind?

S: Thank you, sir, not on my account, it can never be too warm, never too bright, for me. But, with your permission, I shall shed my overall.

A: [*With alacrity.*] Please do, miss, please do. [*Pause.*]  
Staggering! Staggering! Ah were I but . . . forty years younger!

S: [*Rereading.*] 'Ah my God my God.' [*Blow with pencil.*] 'My God.'

A: Crabbed youth! No pity! [*Thump with ruler.*] Do you mark me? On! [*Silence.*] Dick! [*Swish and thud of pizzle on flesh. Faint cry from FOX.*] Off record, miss, remember?

S: Drat it! Where's that eraser?

A: Erase, miss, erase, we're in trouble enough already. [*Ruler.*]  
On! [*Silence.*] Dick!

F: Ah yes, that for sure, live I did, no denying, all stones all sides—

A: One moment.

F: —walls no further—

A: [*Ruler.*] Silence! Dick! [*Silence. Musing.*] Live I did . . .  
[*Pause.*] Has he used that turn before, miss?

S: To what turn do you allude, sir?

A: Live I did.

S: Oh yes, sir, it's a notion crops up now and then. Perhaps not in those precise terms, so far, that I could not say

offhand. But allusions to a life, though not common, are not rare.

A: His own life?

S: Yes, sir, a life all his own.

A: [*Disappointed.*] I might have known. [*Pause.*] What a memory—mine! [*Pause.*] Have you read the Purgatory, miss, of the divine Florentine?

S: Alas no, sir. I have merely flipped through the Inferno.

A: [*Incredulous.*] Not read the Purgatory?

S: Alas no, sir.

A: There all sigh, I was, I was. It's like a knell. Strange, is it not?

S: In what sense, sir?

A: Why, one would rather have expected, I shall be. No?

S: [*With tender condescension.*] The creatures! [*Pause.*] It is getting on for three, sir.

A: [*Sigh.*] Good. Where were we?

S: '... walls no further—'

A: Before, that, miss, the house is not on fire.

S: '... live I did, no denying, all stones all sides'—inaudible—'walls—'

A: [*Ruler.*] On! [*Silence.*] Dick!

S: Sir.

A: [*Impatiently.*] What is it, miss, can't you see that old time is aflying?

S: I was going to suggest a touch of kindness, sir, perhaps just a hint of kindness.

A: So soon? And then? [*Firmly.*] No, miss, I appreciate your sentiment. But I have my method. Shall I remind you of it? [*Pause. Pleading.*] Don't say no! [*Pause.*] Oh you are an angel! You may sit, Dick. [*Pause.*] In a word, REDUCE the pressure instead of increasing it. [*Lyrical.*] Caress, fount of resipescence! [*Calmer.*] Dick, if you would. [*Swish and thud of pizzle on flesh. Faint cry from FOX.*] Careful, miss.

S: Have no fear, sir.

A: [*Ruler.*] ... walls ... walls what?

S: 'no further', sir.

A: Right. [*Ruler.*] ... walls no further ... [*Ruler.*] On! [*Silence.*] Dick!

F: That for sure, no further, and there gaze, all the way up, all the way down, slow gaze, age upon age, up again, down again, little lichens of my own span, living dead in the stones, and there took to the tunnels. [*Silence. Ruler.*] Oceans too, that too, no denying, I drew near down the tunnels, blue above, blue ahead, that for sure, and there too, no further, ways end, all ends and farewell, farewell and fall, farewell seasons, till I fare again. [*Silence. Ruler.*] Farewell.

[*Silence. Ruler. Pause.*]

A: Dick!

F: That for sure, no denying, no further, down in Spring, up in Fall, or inverse, such summers missed, such winters.  
[*Pause.*]

A: Nice! Nicely put! Such summers missed! So sibilant! Don't you agree, miss?

F: ]	Ah that for sure—
S: ]	[ <i>Together.</i> ] Oh me you know—

A: Hsst!

F: —fatigue, what fatigue, my brother inside me, my old twin, ah to be he and he—but no, no no. [*Pause.*] No no.  
[*Silence. Ruler.*] Me get up, me go on, what a hope, it was he, for hunger. Have yourself opened, Maud would say, . opened up, it's nothing, I'll give him suck if he's still alive, ah but no, no no. [*Pause.*] No no.  
[*Silence.*]

A: [*Discouraged.*] Ah dear.

S: He is weeping, sir, shall I note it?

A: I really do not know what to advise, miss.

S: Inasmuch as . . . how shall I say? . . . human trait . . . can one say in English?

A: I have never come across it, miss, but no doubt.

F: Scrabble scrabble—

A: Silence! [*Pause.*] No holding him!

S: As such . . . I feel . . . perhaps . . . at a pinch . . .

[*Pause.*]

A: Are you familiar with the works of Sterne, miss?

S: Alas no, sir.

A: I may be quite wrong, but I seem to remember, there

somewhere, a tear an angel comes to catch as it falls. Yes, I seem to remember . . . admittedly he was grandchild to an archbishop. [*Half rueful, half complacent.*] Ah these old spectres from the days of book reviewing, they lie in wait for one at every turn. [*Pause. Suddenly decided.*] Note it, miss, note it, and come what may. As well as for a sheep . . . [*Pause.*] Who is this woman . . . what's the name?

s: Maud. I don't know, sir, no previous mention of her has been made.

A: [*Excited.*] Are you sure?

s: Positive, sir. You see, my nanny was a Maud, so that the name would have struck me, had it been pronounced. [*Pause.*]

A: I may be quite wrong, but I somehow have the feeling this is the first time—oh I know it's a far call!—that he has actually . . . *named* anyone. No?

s: That may well be, sir. To make sure I would have to check through from the beginning. That would take time.

A: Kith and kin?

s: Never a word, sir. I have been struck by it. Mine play such a part, in my life!

A: And of a sudden, in the same sentence, a woman, with Christian name to boot, and a brother. I ask you! [*Pause.*]

s: That twin, sir . . .

A: I know, not very convincing.

s: [*Scandalized.*] But it's quite simply impossible! Inside him! *Him!*

A: No no, such things happen, such things happen. Nature, you know . . . [*Faint laugh.*] Fortunately. A world without monsters, just imagine! [*Pause for imagining.*] No, that is not what troubles me. [*Warmly.*] Look you, miss, what counts is not so much the *thing*, in itself, that would astonish me too. No, it's the word, the notion. The notion brother is not unknown to him! [*Pause.*] But what really matters is this woman—what name did you say?

s: Maud, sir.

A: Maud!

s: And who is in milk, what is more, or about to be.

A: For mercy's sake! [*Pause.*] How does the passage go again?

S: [*Rereading.*] 'Me get up, me go on, what a hope, it was he, for hunger. Have yourself opened, Maud would say, opened up, it's nothing, I'll give him suck if he's still alive, ah but no, no no.' [*Pause.*] 'No no.'

[*Pause.*]

A: And then the tear.

S: Exactly, sir. What I call the human trait.

[*Pause.*]

A: [*Low, with emotion.*] Miss.

S: Sir.

A: Can it be we near our goal. [*Pause.*] Oh how bewitching you look when you show your teeth! Ah were I but . . . thirty years younger.

S: It is well after three, sir.

A: [*Sigh.*] Good. Where he left off. Once more.

S: 'Oh but no, no—'

A: Ah but no. No?

S: You are quite right, sir. 'Ah but no, no—'

A: [*Severely.*] Have a care, miss.

S: 'Ah but no, no no.' [*Pause.*] 'No, no.'

A: [*Ruler.*] On! [*Silence.*] Dick!

S: He has gone off, sir.

A: Just a shade lighter, Dick. [*Mild thud of pizzle.*] Ah no, you exaggerate, better than that. [*Swish and violent thud. Faint cry from FOX. Ruler.*] Ah but no, no no. On!

F: [*Scream.*] Let me out! Peter out in the stones!

A: Ah dear! There he goes again. Peter out in the stones!

S: It's a mercy he's tied.

A: [*Gently.*] Be reasonable, Fox. Stop—you may sit, Dick—stop jibbing. It's hard on you, we know. It does not lie entirely with us, we know. You might prattle away to your latest breath and still the one . . . thing remain unsaid that can give you back your darling solitudes, we know. But this much is sure: the more you say the greater your chances. Is that not so, miss?

S: It stands to reason, sir.

A: [*As to a backward pupil.*] Don't ramble! Treat the subject, whatever it is! [*Snivel.*] More variety! [*Snivel.*] Those



everlasting wilds may have their charm, but there is nothing there for us, that would astonish me. [*Snivel.*] Those micaceous schists, if you knew the effect [*Snivel.*] they can have on one, in the long run. [*Snivel.*] And your fauna! Those fodient rodents! [*Snivel.*] You wouldn't have a handkerchief, miss, you could lend me?

s: Here you are, sir.

A: Most kind. [*Blows nose abundantly.*] Much obliged.

s: Oh you may keep it, sir.

A: No no, now I'll be all right. [*To FOX.*] Of course we do not know, any more than you, what exactly it is we are after, what sign or set of words. But since you have failed so far to let it escape you, it is not by harking on the same old themes that you are likely to succeed, that would astonish me.

s: He has gone off again, sir.

A: [*Warming to his point.*] Someone, perhaps that is what is wanting, someone who once saw you . . . [*Abating.*] . . . go by. I may be quite wrong, but try, at least, what do you stand to lose? [*Beside himself.*] Even though it is not true!

s: [*Shocked.*] Oh sir!

A: A father, a mother, a friend, a . . . Beatrice—no, that is asking too much. Simply someone, anyone, who once saw you . . . go by. [*Pause.*] That woman . . . what's the name?

s: Maud, sir.

A: That Maud, for example, perhaps you once brushed against each other. Think hard!

s: He has gone off, sir.

A: Dick!—no, wait. Kiss him, miss, perhaps that will stir some fibre.

s: Where, sir?

A: In his heart, in his entrails—or some other part.

s: No, I mean kiss him where, sir?

A: [*Angry.*] Why on his stinker of a mouth, What do you suppose? [*STENOGRAPHER kisses FOX. Howl from FOX.*] Till it bleeds! Kiss it white! [*Howl from FOX.*] Suck his gullet!  
[*Silence.*]

s: He has fainted away, sir.

- A: Ah . . . perhaps I went too far. [*Pause.*] Perhaps I slipped you too soon.
- s: Oh no, sir, you could not have waited a moment longer, time is up. [*Pause.*] The fault is mine, I did not go about it as I ought.
- A: Come, come, miss! To the marines! [*Pause.*] Up already! [*Pained.*] I chatter too much.
- s: Come, come, sir, don't say that, it is part of your rôle, as animator.  
[*Pause.*]
- A: That tear, miss, do you remember?
- s: Oh yes, sir, distinctly.
- A: [*Faint hope.*] Not the first time by any chance?
- s: Heavens no, sir, what an idea!
- A: [*Disappointed.*] I might have known.
- s: Last winter, now I come to think of it, he shed several, do you not remember?
- A: Last winter! But, my dear child, I don't remember yesterday, it is down the hatch with love's young dream. Last winter!  
[*Pause. Low, with emotion.*] Miss.
- s: [*Low.*] Sir.
- A: That . . . Maud.  
[*Pause.*]
- s: [*Encouraging.*] Yes, sir.
- A: Well . . . you know . . . I may be wrong . . . I wouldn't like to . . . I hardly dare say it . . . but it seems to me that . . . here . . . possibly . . . we have something at last.
- s: Would to God, sir.
- A: Particularly with that tear so hard behind. It is not the first, agreed. But in such a context!
- s: And the milk, sir, don't forget the milk.
- A: The breast! One can almost see it!
- s: Who got her in that condition, there's another question for us.
- A: What condition, miss, I fail to follow you.
- s: Someone has fecundated her. [*Pause. Impatient.*] If she is in milk someone must have fecundated her.
- A: To be sure!
- s: Who?
- A: [*Very excited.*] You mean . . .

s: I ask myself.

[*Pause.*]

A: May we have that passage again, miss?

s: 'Have yourself opened, Maud would say, opened—'

A: [*Delighted.*] That frequentative! [*Pause.*] Sorry, miss.

s: 'Have yourself opened, Maud would say, opened—'

A: Don't skip, miss, the text in its entirety if you please.

s: I skip nothing, sir. [*Pause.*] What have I skipped, sir?

A: [*Emphatically.*] '... between two kisses ...' [*Sarcastic.*]

That mere trifle! [*Angry.*] How can we ever hope to get anywhere if you suppress gems of that magnitude?

s: But, sir, he never said anything of the kind.

A: [*Angry.*] '... Maud would say, *between two kisses*, etc.'

Amend.

s: But, sir, I—

A: What the devil are you deriding, miss? My hearing? My memory? My good faith? [*Thunderous.*] Amend!

s: [*Feebly.*] As you will, sir.

A: Let us hear how it runs now.

s: [*Tremulous.*] 'Have yourself opened, Maud would say, between two kisses, opened up, it's nothing, I'll give him suck if he's still alive, ah but no, no no.' [*Faint pencil.*] 'No no.'

[*Silence.*]

A: Don't cry, miss, dry your pretty eyes and smile at me. Tomorrow, who knows, we may be free.

# Words and Music

A piece for radio

Written in English and completed towards the end of 1961. First published in *Evergreen Review* (Nov./Dec. 1962). First broadcast on the BBC Third Programme on 13 November 1962.

MUSIC: *Small orchestra softly tuning up.*

WORDS: Please! [*Tuning. Louder.*] Please! [*Tuning dies away.*]  
How much longer cooped up here in the dark? [*With loathing.*] With you! [*Pause.*] Theme . . . [*Pause.*] Theme . . .  
sloth. [*Pause. Rattled off, low.*] Sloth is of all the passions  
the most powerful passion and indeed no passion is more  
powerful than the passion of sloth, this is the mode in which  
the mind is most affected and indeed—[*Burst of tuning.*  
*Loud, imploring.*] Please! [*Tuning dies away. As before.*]  
The mode in which the mind is most affected and indeed in  
no mode is the mind more affected than in this, by passion  
we are to understand a movement of the soul pursuing or  
fleeing real or imagined pleasure or pain pleasure or pain  
real or imagined pleasure or pain, of all these movements  
and who can number them of all these movements and  
they are legion sloth is the most urgent and indeed by no  
movement is the soul more urged than by this by this by  
this to and from by no movement the soul more urged than  
by this to and—[*Pause.*] From. [*Pause.*] Listen!  
[*Distant sound of rapidly shuffling carpet slippers.*] At last!  
[*Shuffling louder. Burst of tuning.*] Hsst!  
[*Tuning dies away. Shuffling louder. Silence.*]

CROAK: Joe.

WORDS: [*Humble.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Bob.

MUSIC: *Humble muted adsum.*

CROAK: My comforts! Be friends! [*Pause.*] Bob.

MUSIC: *As before.*

CROAK: Joe.

WORDS: [*As before.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Be friends! [*Pause.*] I am late, forgive. [*Pause.*] The face.  
[*Pause.*] On the stairs. [*Pause.*] Forgive. [*Pause.*] Joe.

WORDS: [*As before.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Bob.

MUSIC: *As before.*

CROAK: Forgive. [*Pause.*] In the tower. [*Pause.*] The face.  
[*Long pause.*] Theme tonight . . . [*Pause.*] Theme  
tonight . . . love. [*Pause.*] Love. [*Pause.*] My club. [*Pause.*]  
Joe.

WORDS: [*As before.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Love. [*Pause. Thump of club on ground.*] Love!

WORDS: [*Orotund.*] Love is of all the passions the most powerful  
passion and indeed no passion is more powerful than the  
passion of love. [*Clears throat.*] This is the mode in which  
the mind is most strongly affected and indeed in no mode  
is the mind more strongly affected than in this. [*Pause.*]

CROAK: *Rending sigh. Thump of club.*

WORDS: [*As before.*] By passion we are to understand a move-  
ment of the mind pursuing or fleeing real or imagined  
pleasure or pain. [*Clears throat.*] Of all—

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] Oh!

WORDS: [*As before.*] Of all these movements then and who can  
number them and they are legion sloth is the LOVE is the  
most urgent and indeed by no manner of movement is the  
soul more urged than by this, to and—  
[*Violent thump of club.*]

CROAK: Bob.

WORDS: From.

[*Violent thump of club.*]

CROAK: Bob!

MUSIC: *As before.*

CROAK: Love!

MUSIC: *Rap of baton on stand. Soft music worthy of foregoing,  
great expression, with audible groans and protestations—  
'No!' 'Please!' etc.—from WORDS. Pause.*

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] Oh! [*Thump of club.*] Louder!

MUSIC: *Loud rap of baton and as before fortissimo, all expression  
gone, drowning WORDS' protestations. Pause.*

CROAK: My comforts! [*Pause.*] Joe sweet.

WORDS: [*As before.*] Arise then and go now the manifest  
unanswerable—

CROAK: *Groans.*

WORDS: —to wit this love what is this love that more than all the cursed deadly or any other of its great movers so moves the soul and soul what is this soul that more than by any of its great movers is by love so moved? [*Clears throat. Prosaic.*] Love of woman, I mean, if that is what my Lord means.

CROAK: Alas!

WORDS: What? [*Pause. Very rhetorical.*] Is love the word? [*Pause. Do.*] Is soul the word? [*Pause. Do.*] Do we mean love, when we say love? [*Pause. Pause. Do.*] Soul, when we say soul?

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] Oh! [*Pause.*] Bob dear.

WORDS: Do we? [*With sudden gravity.*] Or don't we?

CROAK: [*Imploring.*] Bob!

MUSIC: *Rap of baton. Love and soul music, with just audible protestations—'No!' 'Please!' 'Peace!' etc.—from WORDS.*  
*Pause.*

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] Oh! [*Pause.*] My balms! [*Pause.*] Joe.

WORDS: [*Humble.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Bob.

MUSIC: *Adsum as before.*

CROAK: My balms! [*Pause.*] Age. [*Pause.*] Joe. [*Pause. Thump of club.*] Joe.

WORDS: [*As before.*] My Lord.

CROAK: Age!

[*Pause.*]

WORDS: [*Faltering.*] Age is . . . age is when . . . old age I mean . . . if that is what my Lord means . . . is when . . . if you're a man . . . were a man . . . huddled . . . nodding . . . the ingle . . . waiting—

[*Violent thump of club.*]

CROAK: Bob. [*Pause.*] Age. [*Pause. Violent thump of club.*] Age!

MUSIC: *Rap of baton. Age music, soon interrupted by violent thump.*

CROAK: Together. [*Pause. Thump.*] Together! [*Pause. Violent thump.*] Together, dogs!

MUSIC: *Long la.*

WORDS: [*Imploring.*] No!



[*Violent thump.*]

CROAK: Dogs!

MUSIC: *La.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing.*] Age is when ... to a man ...

MUSIC: *Improvement of above.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] Age is when to a man ...

MUSIC: *Suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] Huddled o'er ... the ingle ....

[*Pause. Violent thump. Trying to sing.*] Waiting for the  
hag to put the ... pan in the bed ...

MUSIC: *Improvement of above.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] Waiting for the hag to put the  
pan in the bed.

MUSIC: *Suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] And bring the ... arrowroot ...

[*Pause. Violent thump. As before.*] And bring the toddy....

[*Pause. Tremendous thump.*]

CROAK: Dogs!

MUSIC: *Suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] She comes in the ashes ....

[*Imploring.*] No!

MUSIC: *Repeats suggestion.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] She comes in the ashes who  
loved could not be ... won or ...

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Repeats end of previous suggestion.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] Or won not loved ... [*Wearily.*]  
... or some other trouble ... [*Pause. Trying to sing.*]

Comes in the ashes like in that old—

MUSIC: *Interrupts with improvement of this and brief  
suggestion.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] Comes in the ashes like in that  
old light ... her face ... in the ashes ....

[*Pause.*]

CROAK: Groans.

MUSIC: *Suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*] That old moonlight ... on the  
earth ... again.

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Further brief suggestion.*

[*Silence.*]

CROAK: *Groans.*

MUSIC: *Plays air through alone, then invites WORDS with opening, pause, invites again and finally accompanies very softly.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing, softly.*]

Age is when to a man  
Huddled o'er the ingle  
Shivering for the hag  
To put the pan in the bed  
And bring the toddy  
She comes in the ashes  
Who loved could not be won  
Or won not loved  
Or some other trouble  
Comes in the ashes  
Like in that old light  
The face in the ashes  
That old starlight  
On the earth again.

[*Long pause.*]

CROAK: [*Murmur.*] The face. [*Pause.*] The face. [*Pause.*] The face. [*Pause.*] The face.

MUSIC: *Rap of baton and warmly sentimental, about one minute.*  
[*Pause.*]

CROAK: The face.

WORDS: [*Cold.*] Seen from above in that radiance so cold and faint . . .

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Warm suggestion from above for above.*

WORDS: [*Disregarding, cold.*] Seen from above at such close quarters in that radiance so cold and faint with eyes so dimmed by . . . what had passed, its quite . . . piercing beauty is a little . . .

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Renews timidly previous suggestion.*

WORDS: [*Interrupting, violently.*] Peace!

CROAK: My comforts! Be friends!

[*Pause.*]

WORDS: . . . blunted. Some moments later however, such are the powers of recuperation at this age, the head is drawn back to a distance of two or three feet, the eyes widen to a stare and begin to feast again. [*Pause.*] What then is seen would have been better seen in the light of day, that is incontestable. But how often it has, in recent months, how often, at all hours, under all angles, in cloud and shine, been seen I mean. And there is, is there not, in that clarity of silver . . . that clarity of silver . . . is there not . . . my Lord . . .

[*Pause.*] Now and then the rye, swayed by a light wind, casts and withdraws its shadow.

[*Pause.*]

CROAK: *Groans.*

WORDS: Leaving aside the features or lineaments proper, matchless severally and in their ordonnance—

CROAK: *Groans.*

WORDS: —flare of the black disordered hair as though spread wide on water, the brows knitted in a groove suggesting pain but simply concentration more likely all things considered on some consummate inner process, the eyes of course closed in keeping with this, the lashes . . . [*Pause.*] . . . the nose . . . [*Pause.*] . . . nothing, a little pinched perhaps, the lips . . .

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] Lily!

WORDS: . . . tight, a gleam of tooth biting on the under, no coral, no swell, whereas normally . . .

CROAK: *Groans.*

WORDS: . . . the whole so blanched and still that were it not for the great white rise and fall of the breasts, spreading as they mouht and then subsiding to their natural . . . aperture—

MUSIC: *Irrepressible burst of spreading and subsiding music with vain protestations—'Peace!' 'No!' 'Please!' etc.—from WORDS. Triumph and conclusion.*

WORDS: [*Gently expostulatory.*] My Lord! [*Pause. Faint thump of club.*] I resume, so wan and still and so ravished away that it seems no more of the earth than Mira in the Whale, at her tenth and greatest magnitude on this particular night shining coldly down—as we say, looking up. [*Pause.*] Some moments later however, such are the powers—

CROAK: [*Anguished.*] No!

WORDS: —the brows uncloud, the lips part and the eyes... [*Pause.*]  
 ... the brows uncloud, the nostrils dilate, the lips part and  
 the eyes... [*Pause.*] ... a little colour comes back into the  
 cheeks and the eyes... [*Reverently.*] ... open. [*Pause.*] Then  
 down a little way... [*Pause. Change to poetic tone. Low.*]

Then down a little way  
 Through the trash  
 To where ... towards where ....

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Discreet suggestion for above.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*]

Then down a little way  
 Through the trash  
 Towards where ...

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Discreet suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*]

All dark no begging  
 No giving no words  
 No sense no need ....

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *More confident suggestion for following.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing this.*]

Through the scum  
 Down a little way  
 To where one glimpse  
 Of that wellhead.

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Invites with opening, pause, invites again and finally  
 accompanies very softly.*

WORDS: [*Trying to sing, softly.*]

Then down a little way  
 Through the trash  
 Towards where

All dark no begging  
No giving no words  
No sense no need  
Through the scum  
Down a little way  
To whence one glimpse  
Of that wellhead.

[*Pause. Shocked.*] My Lord! [*Sound of club let fall. As before.*] My Lord! [*Shuffling slippers, with halts. They die away. Long pause.*] Bob. [*Pause.*] Bob!

MUSIC: *Briefrude retort.*

WORDS: Music. [*Imploring.*] Music!

[*Pause.*]

MUSIC: *Rap of baton and statement with elements already used or wellhead alone.*

[*Pause.*]

WORDS: Again. [*Pause. Imploring.*] Again!

MUSIC: *As before or only very slightly varied.*

[*Pause.*]

WORDS: *Deep sigh.*

CURTAIN

# Cascando

A radio piece for music and voice

Written in French in 1962, with music by Marcel Mihalovici.  
First published in *Dramatische Dichtungen*, vol. 1 (1963). First  
published in English in *Evergreen Review* (May/June 1963).  
First broadcast in French by the ORTF on 13 October 1963.  
First broadcast in English on the BBC Third Programme on 6  
October 1964.

OPENER: [*Cold.*] It is the month of May ... for me.

[*Pause.*]

Correct.

[*Pause.*]

I open.

VOICE: [*Low, panting.*] —story ... if you could finish it ...  
you could rest ... sleep ... not before ... oh I know ...  
the ones I've finished ... thousands and one ... all I ever  
did ... in my life ... with my life ... saying to myself ...  
finish this one ... it's the right one ... then rest ... sleep  
... no more stories ... no more words ... and finished it ...  
and not the right one ... couldn't rest ... straight away  
another ... to begin ... to finish ... saying to myself ...  
finish this one ... then rest ... this time ... it's the right  
one ... this time ... you have it ... and finished it ... and  
not the right one ... couldn't rest ... straight away another  
... but this one ... it's different ... I'll finish it ... I've got  
it ... Woburn ... I resume ... a long life ... already ... say  
what you like ... a few misfortunes ... that's enough ...  
five years later ... ten ... I don't know ... Woburn ... he's  
changed ... not enough ... recognizable ... in the shed ...  
yet another ... waiting for night ... night to fall ... to go  
out ... go on ... elsewhere ... sleep elsewhere ... it's slow  
... he lifts his head ... now and then ... his eyes ... to the  
window ... it's darkening ... earth darkening ... it's night  
... he gets up ... knees first ... then up ... on his feet ...  
slips out ... Woburn ... same old coat ... right the sea ...  
left the hills ... he has the choice ... he has only—

OPENER: [*With* VOICE.] And I close.

[*Silence.*]

I open the other.

MUSIC: .....

OPENER: [*With* MUSIC.] And I close.



[*Silence.*]

I open both.

VOICE: ] —on ... getting on ... finish ... don't  
 MUSIC: ] [*Together.*] .....  
 give up ... then rest ... sleep ... not before ... finish ...  
 .....  
 this time ... it's the right one ... you have it ... you've got  
 .....  
 it ... it's there ... somewhere ... you've got him ... follow  
 .....  
 him ... don't lose him ... Woburn story ... getting on ...  
 .....  
 finish ... then sleep ... no more stories ... no more words  
 .....  
 ... come on ... next thing ... he—  
 .....

OPENER: [*With VOICE and MUSIC.*] And I close.

[*Silence.*]

I start again.

VOICE: —down ... gentle slopes ... boreen ... giant aspens ...  
 wind in the boughs ... faint sea ... Woburn ... same old  
 coat ... he goes on ... stops ... not a soul ... not yet ...  
 night too bright ... say what you like ... he goes on ...  
 hugging the bank ... same old stick ... he goes down ...  
 falls ... on purpose or not ... can't see ... he's down ...  
 that's what counts ... face in the mud ... arms spread ...  
 that's the idea ... already ... there already ... no not yet  
 ... he gets up ... knees first ... hands flat ... in the mud ...  
 head sunk ... then up ... on his feet ... huge bulk ...  
 come on ... he goes on ... he goes down ... come on ...  
 in his head ... what's in his head ... a hole ... a shelter ...  
 a hollow ... in the dunes ... a cave ... vague memory ...  
 in his head ... of a cave ... he goes down ... no more  
 trees ... no more bank ... he's changed ... not enough  
 ... night too bright ... soon the dunes ... no more cover  
 ... not a soul ... not—

[*Silence.*]

MUSIC: .....

[*Silence.*]

VOICE: } —rest ... sleep ... no more stories ...  
 MUSIC: } [*Together.*] .....  
 no more words ... don't give up ... this time ... it's the  
 .....  
 right one ... we're there ... I'm there ... somewhere ...  
 .....  
 Woburn ... I've got him ... don't lose him ... follow him  
 .....  
 ... to the end ... come on ... this time ... it's the right one  
 .....  
 ... finish ... sleep ... Woburn ... come on—  
 .....  
 [*Silence.*]

OPENER: So, at will.

They say, It's in his head.

No. I open.

VOICE: —falls ... again ... on purpose or not ... can't see ...  
 he's down ... that's what matters ... face in the sand ...  
 arms spread ... bare dunes ... not a scrub ... same old  
 coat ... night too bright ... say what you like ... sea  
 louder ... thunder ... manes of foam ... Woburn ... his  
 head ... what's in his head ... peace ... peace again ... in  
 his head ... no further ... no more searching ... sleep ...  
 no not yet ... he gets up ... knees first ... hands flat ... in  
 the sand ... head sunk ... then up ... on his feet ... huge  
 bulk ... same old broadbrim ... jammed down ... come on  
 ... he goes on ... ton weight ... in the sand ... knee-deep ...  
 he goes down ... sea—

OPENER: [*With* VOICE.] And I close.

[*Silence.*]

I open the other.

MUSIC: .....  
 OPENER: [*With* MUSIC.] And I close.

[*Silence.*]

So, at will.

It's my life, I live on that.

[*Pause.*]

Correct.

[*Pause.*]

What do I open?

They say, He opens nothing, he has nothing to open, it's in his head.

They don't see me, they don't see what I do, they don't see what I have, and they say, He opens nothing, he has nothing to open, it's in his head.

I don't protest any more, I don't say any more,  
There is nothing in my head.

I don't answer any more.

I open and close.

VOICE: —lights... of the land... the island... the sky... he  
need only... lift his head... his eyes... he'd see them...  
shine on him... but no... he—  
[*Silence.*]

MUSIC: [*Brief.*] .....  
[*Silence.*]

OPENER: They say, That is not his life, he does not live on that.  
They don't see me, they don't see what my life is, they  
don't see what I live on, and they say, That is not his life,  
he does not live on that.

[*Pause.*]

I have lived on it... till I'm old.

Old enough.

Listen.

VOICE: [*Weakening.*] —this time... I'm there... Woburn...  
it's him... I've seen him... I've got him... come on...  
same old coat... he goes down... falls... falls again...  
on purpose or not... can't see... he's down... that's  
what counts... come on—

OPENER: [*With VOICE.*] Full strength.

VOICE: —face... in the stones... no more sand... all stones...  
that's the idea... we're there... this time... no not yet  
... he gets up... knees first... hands flat... in the stones  
... head sunk... then up... on his feet... huge bulk...  
Woburn... faster... he goes on... he goes down... he—  
[*Silence.*]

MUSIC: [*Weakening.*] .....

OPENER: [*With MUSIC.*] Full strength.

MUSIC: .....

[Silence.]

OPENER: That's not all.

I open both.

Listen.

VOICE: ] —sleep ... no further ... no more

MUSIC: ] [Together.] .....  
 searching ... to find him ... in the dark ... to see him ...  
 .....  
 to say him ... for whom ... that's it ... no matter ...  
 .....  
 never him ... never right ... start again ... in the dark ...  
 .....  
 done with that ... this time ... it's the right one ... we're  
 .....  
 there ... nearly ... finish—  
 .....

[Silence.]

OPENER: From one world to another, it's as though they drew  
 together. We have not much further to go. Good.

VOICE: ] —nearly ... I've got him ... I've seen

MUSIC: ] [Together] .....  
 him ... I've said him ... we're there ... nearly ... no more  
 .....  
 stories ... all false ... this time ... it's the right one ... I  
 .....  
 have it ... finish ... sleep ... Woburn ... it's him ... I've  
 .....  
 got him ... follow him ... to—  
 .....

[Silence.]

OPENER: Good.

[Pause.]

Yes, correct, the month of May.

You know, the reawakening.

[Pause.]

I open.

VOICE: —no tiller ... no thwarts ... no oars ... afloat ... sucked  
 out ... then back ... aground ... drags free ... out ...  
 Woburn ... he fills it ... flat out ... face in the bilge ...

arms spread . . . same old coat . . . hands clutching . . . the  
gunnels . . . no . . . I don't know . . . I see him . . . he clings  
on . . . out to sea . . . heading nowhere . . . for the island . . .  
then no more . . . else—

[*Silence.*]

MUSIC: . . . . .  
[*Silence.*]

OPENER: They said, It's his own, it's his voice, it's in his head.  
[*Pause.*]

VOICE: —faster . . . out . . . driving out . . . rearing . . . plunging  
. . . heading nowhere . . . for the island . . . then no more  
. . . elsewhere . . . anywhere . . . heading anywhere . . .  
lights—  
[*Pause.*]

OPENER: No resemblance.  
I answered, And that . . .

MUSIC: [*Brief.*] . . . . .  
[*Silence.*]

OPENER: . . . is that mine too?  
But I don't answer any more.  
And they don't say anything any more.  
They have quit.  
Good.  
[*Pause.*]

Yes, correct, the month of May, the close of May.  
The long days.  
[*Pause.*]

I open.  
[*Pause.*]  
I'm afraid to open.  
But I must open.  
So I open.

VOICE: —come on . . . Woburn . . . arms spread . . . same old  
coat . . . face in the bilge . . . he clings on . . . island gone . . .  
far astern . . . heading out . . . open sea . . . land gone . . . his  
head . . . what's in his head . . . Woburn—

OPENER: [*With* VOICE.] Come on! Come on!

VOICE: —at last . . . we're there . . . no further . . . no more  
searching . . . in the dark . . . elsewhere . . . always elsewhere

... we're there ... nearly ... Woburn ... hang on ... don't  
 let go ... lights gone ... of the land ... all gone ... nearly  
 all ... too far ... too late ... of the sky ... those ... if you  
 like ... he need only ... turn over ... he'd see them ...  
 shine on him ... but no ... he clings on ... Woburn ... he's  
 changed ... nearly enough—

[*Silence.*]

MUSIC: .....

OPENER: [*With MUSIC.*] God.

MUSIC: .....

[*Silence.*]

OPENER: God God.

[*Pause.*]

There was a time I asked myself, What is it.

There were times I answered, It's the outing.

Two outings.

Then the return.

Where?

To the village.

To the inn.

Two outings, then at last the return, to the village, to the  
 inn, by the only road that leads there.

An image, like any other.

But I don't answer any more.

I open.

VOICE: ] —don't let go ... finish ... it's the  
 MUSIC: ] [*Together.*] .....

right one ... this time ... I have it ... we're there ...

.....

Woburn ... nearly—

.....

OPENER: [*With VOICE and MUSIC.*] As though they had linked  
 their arms.

VOICE: ] —sleep ... no more stories ... come on  
 MUSIC: ] [*Together.*] .....

... Woburn ... it's him ... see him ... say him ... to the

.....

end ... don't let go—

OPENER: [*With VOICE and MUSIC.*] Good.

VOICE: } —nearly ... just a few more ... a few  
 MUSIC: } [*Together.*] .....  
 more ... I'm there ... nearly ... Woburn ... it's him ... it  
 .....  
 was him ... I've got him ... nearly—

OPENER: [*With VOICE and MUSIC, fervently.*] Good!

VOICE: } —this time ... it's the right one ...  
 MUSIC: } [*Together.*] .....  
 finish ... no more stories ... sleep ... we're there ... nearly  
 .....  
 ... just a few more ... don't let go ... Woburn ... he clings  
 .....  
 on ... come on ... come on—  
 .....  
 [*Silence.*]

CURTAIN

# Play

A play in one act



Written in English in late 1962-3. First published in German, as *Spiel*, in *Theater Heute* (July 1963). First published in English by Faber and Faber, London, in 1964. First performance was of *Spiel*, translated by Erika and Elmar Tophoven, at the Ulmer Theater, Ulm-Donau, on 14 June 1963. First performed in Britain by the National Theatre Company at the Old Vic Theatre, London, on 7 April 1964.

*Front centre, touching one another, three identical grey urns (see page 159) about one yard high. From each a head protrudes, the neck held fast in the urn's mouth. The heads are those, from left to right as seen from auditorium, of w2, m and w1. They face undeviatingly front throughout the play. Faces so lost to age and aspect as to seem almost part of urns. But no masks.*

*Their speech is provoked by a spotlight projected on faces alone (see page 158).*

*The transfer of light from one face to another is immediate. No blackout, i.e. return to almost complete darkness of opening, except where indicated.*

*The response to light is immediate.*

*Faces impassive throughout. Voices toneless except where an expression is indicated.*

*Rapid tempo throughout.*

*The curtain rises on a stage in almost complete darkness. Urns just discernible. Five seconds.*

*Faint spots simultaneously on three faces. Three seconds. Voices faint, largely unintelligible.*

- |     |   |  |
|-----|---|--|
| w1: | } | Yes, strange, darkness best, and the darker the worse, till all dark, then all well, for the time, but it will come, the time will come, the thing is there, you'll see it, get off me, keep off me, all dark, all still, all over, wiped out—       |
| w2: | } | Yes, perhaps, a shade gone, I suppose, some might say, poor thing, a shade gone, just a shade, in the head—[ <i>Faint wild laugh.</i> ]—just a shade, but I doubt it, I doubt it, not really, I'm all right, still all right, do my best, all I can— |

[*Together.*

*See page 159.]*

M: Yes, peace, one assumed, all out, all the pain, all as if . . . never been, it will come—[*Hiccup.*]—pardon, no sense in this, oh I know . . . none the less, one assumed, peace . . . I mean . . . not merely all over, but as if . . . never been—

[*Spots off. Blackout. Five seconds. Strong spots simultaneously on three faces. Three seconds. Voices normal strength.*]

w 1: I said to him, Give her up—

w 2: [*Together.*] One morning as I was sitting—

M: We were not long together—

[*Spots off. Blackout. Five seconds. Spot on w 1.*]

w 1: I said to him, Give her up. I swore by all I held most sacred—  
[*Spot from w 1 to w 2.*]

w 2: One morning as I was sitting stitching by the open window she burst in and flew at me. Give him up, she screamed, he's mine. Her photographs were kind to her. Seeing her now for the first time full length in the flesh I understood why he preferred me.  
[*Spot from w 2 to M.*]

M: We were not long together when she smelled the rat. Give up that whore, she said, or I'll cut my throat—[*Hiccup.*] pardon—so help me God. I knew she could have no proof. So I told her I did not know what she was talking about.  
[*Spot from M to w 2.*]

w 2: What are you talking about? I said, stitching away. Someone yours? Give up whom? I smell you off him, she screamed, he stinks of bitch.  
[*Spot from w 2 to w 1.*]

w 1: Though I had him dogged for months by a first-rate man, no shadow of proof was forthcoming. And there was no denying that he continued as . . . assiduous as ever. This, and his horror of the merely Platonic thing, made me sometimes wonder if I were not accusing him unjustly. Yes.  
[*Spot from w 1 to M.*]

M: What have you to complain of? I said. Have I been neglecting you? How could we be together in the way we are if there were someone else? Loving her as I did, with all my heart,

I could not but feel sorry for her.

*[Spot from M to W2.]*

W2: Fearing she was about to offer me violence I rang for Erskine and had her shown out. Her parting words, as he could testify, if he is still living, and has not forgotten, coming and going on the earth, letting people in, showing people out, were to the effect that she would settle my hash. I confess this did alarm me a little, at the time.

*[Spot from W2 to M.]*

M: She was not convinced. I might have known. I smell her off you, she kept saying. There was no answer to this. So I took her in my arms and swore I could not live without her. I meant it, what is more. Yes, I am sure I did. She did not repulse me.

*[Spot from M to W1.]*

W1: Judge then of my astonishment when one fine morning, as I was sitting stricken in the morning room, he slunk in, fell on his knees before me, buried his face in my lap and . . . confessed.

*[Spot from W1 to M.]*

M: She put a bloodhound on me, but I had a little chat with him. He was glad of the extra money.

*[Spot from M to W2.]*

W2: Why don't you get out, I said, when he started moaning about his home life, there is obviously nothing between you any more. Or is there?

*[Spot from W2 to W1.]*

W1: I confess my first feeling was one of wonderment. What a male!

*[Spot from W1 to M. He opens his mouth to speak. Spot from M to W2.]*

W2: Anything between us, he said, what do you take me for, a something machine? And of course with him no danger of the . . . spiritual thing. Then why don't you get out? I said. I sometimes wondered if he was not living with her for her money.

*[Spot from W2 to M.]*

M: The next thing was the scene between them. I can't have her crashing in here, she said, threatening to take my life. I

must have looked incredulous. Ask Erskine, she said, if you don't believe me. But she threatens to take her own, I said. Not yours? she said. No, I said, hers. We had fun trying to work this out.

*[Spot from M to w1.]*

w1: Then I forgave him. To what will love not stoop! I suggested a little jaunt to celebrate, to the Riviera or our darling Grand Canary. He was looking pale. Peaked. But this was not possible just then. Professional commitments.

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: She came again. Just strolled in. All honey. Licking her lips. Poor thing. I was doing my nails, by the open window. He has told me all about it, she said. Who he, I said filing away, and what it? I know what torture you must be going through, she said, and I have dropped in to say I bear you no ill-feeling. I rang for Erskine.

*[Spot from w2 to M.]*

M: Then I got frightened and made a clean breast of it. She was looking more and more desperate. She had a razor in her vanity-bag. Adulterers, take warning, never admit.

*[Spot from M to w1.]*

w1: When I was satisfied it was all over I went to have a gloat. Just a common tart. What he could have found in her when he had me—

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: When he came again we had it out. I felt like death. He went on about why he had to tell her. Too risky and so on. That meant he had gone back to her. Back to that!

*[Spot from w2 to w1.]*

w1: Pudding face, puffy, spots, blubber mouth, jowls, no neck, dugs you could—

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: He went on and on. I could hear a mower. An old hand mower. I stopped him and said that whatever I might feel I had no silly threats to offer—but not much stomach for her leavings either. He thought that over for a bit.

*[Spot from w2 to w1.]*

w1: Calves like a flunkey—

*[Spot from w1 to M.]*

M: When I saw her again she knew. She was looking—[*Hiccup.*]—wretched. Pardon. Some fool was cutting grass. A little rush, then another. The problem was how to convince her that no . . . revival of intimacy was involved. I couldn't. I might have known. So I took her in my arms and said I could not go on living without her. I don't believe I could have.

[*Spot from M to W2.*]

W2: The only solution was to go away together. He swore we should as soon as he had put his affairs in order. In the meantime we were to carry on as before. By that he meant as best we could.

[*Spot from W2 to W1.*]

W1: So he was mine again. All mine. I was happy again. I went about singing. The world—

[*Spot from W1 to M.*]

M: At home all heart to heart, new leaf and bygones bygones. I ran into your ex-doxy, she said one night, on the pillow, you're well out of that. Rather uncalled for, I thought. I am indeed, sweetheart, I said, I am indeed. God what vermin women. Thanks to you, angel, I said.

[*Spot from M to W1.*]

W1: Then I began to smell her off him again. Yes.

[*Spot from W1 to W2.*]

W2: When he stopped coming I was prepared. More or less.

[*Spot from W2 to M.*]

M: Finally it was all too much. I simply could no longer—

[*Spot from M to W1.*]

W1: Before I could do anything he disappeared. That meant she had won. That slut! I couldn't credit it. I lay stricken for weeks. Then I drove over to her place. It was all bolted and barred. All grey with frozen dew. On the way back by Ash and Snodland—

[*Spot from W1 to M.*]

M: I simply could no longer—

[*Spot from M to W2.*]

W2: I made a bundle of his things and burnt them. It was November and the bonfire was going. All night I smelt them smouldering.

[Spot off w 2. Blackout. Five seconds. Spots half previous strength simultaneously on three faces. Three seconds. Voices proportionately lower.]

w 1:	}	Mercy, mercy—
w 2:		[Together.] To say I am—
m:		When first this change—

[Spots off. Blackout. Five seconds. Spot on m.]

m: When first this change I actually thanked God. I thought, It is done, it is said, now all is going out—  
[Spot from m to w 1.]

w 1: Mercy, mercy, tongue still hanging out for mercy. It will come. You haven't seen me. But you will. Then it will come.  
[Spot from w 1 to w 2.]

w 2: To say I am not disappointed, no, I am. I had anticipated something better. More restful.  
[Spot from w 2 to w 1.]

w 1: Or you will weary of me.  
[Spot from w 1 to m.]

m: Down, all going down, into the dark, peace is coming, I thought, after all, at last, I was right, after all, thank God, when first this change.  
[Spot from m to w 2.]

w 2: Less confused. Less confusing. At the same time I prefer this to . . . the other thing. Definitely. There are endurable moments.  
[Spot from w 2 to m.]

m: I thought.  
[Spot from m to w 2.]

w 2: When you go out—and I go out. Some day you will tire of me and go out . . . for good.  
[Spot from w 2 to w 1.]

w 1: Hellish half-light.  
[Spot from w 1 to m.]

m: Peace, yes, I suppose, a kind of peace, and all that pain as if . . . never been.  
[Spot from m to w 2.]

w 2: Give me up, as a bad job. Go away and start poking and pecking at someone else. On the other hand—  
[Spot from w 2 to w 1.]

w1: Get off me! Get off me!

*[Spot from w1 to m.]*

m: It will come. Must come. There is no future in this.

*[Spot from m to w2.]*

w2: On the other hand things may disimprove, there is that danger.

*[Spot from w2 to m.]*

m: Oh of course I know now—

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: Is it that I do not tell the truth, is that it, that some day somehow I may tell the truth at last and then no more light at last, for the truth?

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: You might get angry and blaze me clean out of my wits. Mightn't you?

*[Spot from w2 to m.]*

m: I know now, all that was just . . . play. And all this? When will all this—

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: Is that it?

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: Mightn't you?

*[Spot from w2 to m.]*

m: All this, when will all this have been . . . just play?

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: I can do nothing . . . for anybody . . . any more . . . thank God. So it must be something I have to say. How the mind works still!

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: But I doubt it. It would not be like you somehow. And you must know I am doing my best. Or don't you?

*[Spot from w2 to m.]*

m: Perhaps they have become friends. Perhaps sorrow—

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: But I have said all I can. All you let me. All I—

*[Spot from w1 to m.]*

m: Perhaps sorrow has brought them together.

*[Spot from m to w2.]*

w2: No doubt I make the same mistake as when it was the sun



that shone, of looking for sense where possibly there is none.

*[Spot from w2 to M.]*

M: Perhaps they meet, and sit, over a cup of that green tea they both so loved, without milk or sugar, not even a squeeze of lemon—

*[Spot from M to w2.]*

w2: Are you listening to me? Is anyone listening to me? Is anyone looking at me? Is anyone bothering about me at all?

*[Spot from w2 to M.]*

M: Not even a squeeze of—

*[Spot from M to w1.]*

w1: Is it something I should do with my face, other than utter? Weep?

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: Am I taboo, I wonder. Not necessarily, now that all danger is averted. That poor creature—I can hear her—that poor creature—

*[Spot from w2 to w1.]*

w1: Bite off my tongue and swallow it? Spit it out? Would that placate you? How the mind works still to be sure!

*[Spot from w1 to M.]*

M: Meet, and sit, now in the one dear place, now in the other, and sorrow together, and compare—*[Hiccup.]* pardon—happy memories.

*[Spot from M to w1.]*

w1: If only I could think, There is no sense in this . . . either, none whatsoever. I can't.

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: That poor creature who tried to seduce you, what ever became of her, do you suppose?—I can hear her. Poor thing.

*[Spot from w2 to M.]*

M: Personally I always preferred Lipton's.

*[Spot from M to w1.]*

w1: And that all is falling, all fallen, from the beginning, on empty air. Nothing being asked at all. No one asking me for anything at all.

*[Spot from w1 to w2.]*

w2: They might even feel sorry for me, if they could see me.  
But never so sorry as I for them.

[*Spot from w2 to w1.*]

w1: I can't.

[*Spot from w1 to w2.*]

w2: Kissing their sour kisses.

[*Spot from w2 to M.*]

M: I pity them in any case, yes, compare my lot with theirs,  
however blessed, and—

[*Spot from M to w1.*]

w1: I can't. The mind won't have it. It would have to go. Yes.

[*Spot from w1 to M.*]

M: Pity them.

[*Spot from M to w2.*]

w2: What do you do when you go out? Sift?

[*Spot from w2 to M.*]

M: Am I hiding something? Have I lost—

[*Spot from M to w1.*]

w1: She had means, I fancy, though she lived like a pig.

[*Spot from w1 to w2.*]

w2: Like dragging a great roller, on a scorching day. The strain  
... to get it moving, momentum coming—

[*Spot off w2. Blackout. Three seconds. Spot on w2.*]

w2: Kill it and strain again.

[*Spot from w2 to M.*]

M: Have I lost ... the thing you want? Why go out? Why go—

[*Spot from M to w2.*]

w2: And you perhaps pitying me, thinking, Poor thing, she  
needs a rest.

[*Spot from w2 to w1.*]

w1: Perhaps she has taken him away to live ... somewhere in  
the sun.

[*Spot from w1 to M.*]

M: Why go down? Why not—

[*Spot from M to w2.*]

w2: I don't know.

[*Spot from w2 to w1.*]

w1: Perhaps she is sitting somewhere, by the open window, her  
hands folded in her lap, gazing down out over the olives—

[*Spot from w1 to m.*]

M: Why not keep on glaring at me without ceasing? I might start to rave and—[*Hiccup.*—bring it up for you. Par—  
[*Spot from m to w2.*]

w2: No.

[*Spot from w2 to m.*]

M: —don.

[*Spot from m to w1.*]

w1: Gazing down out over the olives, then the sea, wondering what can be keeping him, growing cold. Shadow stealing over everything. Creeping. Yes.

[*Spot from w1 to m.*]

M: To think we were never together.

[*Spot from m to w2.*]

w2: Am I not perhaps a little unhinged already?

[*Spot from w2 to w1.*]

w1: Poor creature. Poor creatures.

[*Spot from w1 to m.*]

M: Never woke together, on a May morning, the first to wake to wake the other two. Then in a little dinghy—

[*Spot from m to w1.*]

w1: Penitence, yes, at a pinch, atonement, one was resigned, but no, that does not seem to be the point either.

[*Spot from w1 to w2.*]

w2: I say, Am I not perhaps a little unhinged already? [*Hopefully.*] Just a little? [*Pause.*] I doubt it.

[*Spot from w2 to m.*]

M: A little dinghy—

[*Spot from m to w1.*]

w1: Silence and darkness were all I craved. Well, I get a certain amount of both. They being one. Perhaps it is more wickedness to pray for more.

[*Spot from w1 to m.*]

M: A little dinghy, on the river, I resting on my oars, they lolling on air-pillows in the stern . . . sheets. Drifting. Such fantasies.

[*Spot from m to w1.*]

w1: Hellish half-light.

[*Spot from w1 to w2.*]

w2: A shade gone. In the head. Just a shade. I doubt it.

*[Spot from w2 to m.]*

m: We were not civilized.

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: Dying for dark—and the darker the worse. Strange.

*[Spot from w1 to m.]*

m: Such fantasies. Then. And now—

*[Spot from m to w2.]*

w2: I doubt it.

*[Pause. Peal of wild low laughter from w2 cut short as spot from her to w1.]*

w1: Yes, and the whole thing there, all there, staring you in the face. You'll see it. Get off me. Or weary.

*[Spot from w1 to m.]*

m: And now, that you are . . . mere eye. Just looking. At my face. On and off.

*[Spot from m to w1.]*

w1: Weary of playing with me. Get off me. Yes.

*[Spot from w1 to m.]*

m: Looking for something. In my face. Some truth. In my eyes. Not even.

*[Spot from m to w2. Laugh as before from w2 cut short as spot from her to m.]*

m: Mere eye. No mind. Opening and shutting on me. Am I as much—

*[Spot off m. Blackout. Three seconds. Spot on m.]*

Am I as much as . . . being seen?

*[Spot off m. Blackout. Five seconds. Faint spots simultaneously on three faces. Three seconds. Voices faint, largely unintelligible.]*

w1: } Yes, strange, etc.

w2: } *[Together.]* Yes, perhaps, etc.

m: } Yes, peace, etc.

*[Repeat play.]*

m: *[Closing repeat.]* Am I as much as . . . being seen?

*[Spot off m. Blackout. Five seconds. Strong spots simultaneously on three faces. Three seconds. Voices normal strength.]*

w 1: } I said to him, Give her up-  
 w 2: } [Together.] One morning as I was sitting-  
 m: } We were not long together-  
 [Spots off. Blackout. Five seconds. Spot on m.]  
 m: We were not long together—  
 [Spot off m. Blackout. Five seconds.]

## CURTAIN

## LIGHT

The source of light is single and must not be situated outside the ideal space (stage) occupied by its victims.

The optimum position for the spot is at the centre of the footlights, the faces being thus lit at close quarters and from below.

When exceptionally three spots are required to light the three faces simultaneously, they should be as a single spot branching into three.

Apart from these moments a single mobile spot should be used, swivelling at maximum speed from one face to another as required.

The method consisting in assigning to each face a separate fixed spot is unsatisfactory in that it is less expressive of a unique inquisitor than the single mobile spot.

## CHORUS

w 1	Yes strange	darkness best	and the darker	the worse
w 2	Yes perhaps	a shade gone	I suppose	some might say
M	Yes peace	one assumed	all out	all the pain
w 1	till all dark	then all well	for the time	but it will come
w 2	poor thing	a shade gone	just a shade	in the head
M	all as if	never been	it will come	[ <i>Hiccup.</i> ] pardon
w 1	the time will come	the thing is there		you'll see it
w 2	[ <i>Laugh - - - - -</i> ]	just a shade		but I doubt it
M	no sense in this	oh I know		none the less
w 1	get off me	keep off me	all dark	all still
w 2	<i>I</i> doubt it	not really	I'm all right	still all right
M	one assumed	peace I mean	not merely	all over
w 1	all over	wiped out—		
w 2	do my best	all I can—		
M	but as if	never been—		

## URNS

In order for the urns to be only one yard high, it is necessary either that traps be used, enabling the actors to stand below stage level, or that they kneel throughout play, the urns being open at the back.

Should traps be not available, and the kneeling posture found impracticable, the actors should stand, the urns be enlarged to full length and moved back from front to mid-stage, the tallest actor setting the height, the broadest the breadth, to which the three urns should conform.

The sitting posture results in urns of unacceptable bulk and is not to be considered.

## REPEAT

The repeat may be an exact replica of first statement or it may present an element of variation.

In other words, the light may operate the second time exactly as it did the first (exact replica) or it may try a different method (variation).

The London production (and in a lesser degree the Paris production) opted for the variation with following deviations from first statement:

1. Introduction of an abridged chorus, cut short on laugh of w 2, to open fragment of second repeat.

2. Light less strong in repeat and voices correspondingly lower, giving the following schema, where A is the highest level of light and voice and E the lowest:

C	First chorus.		
A	First part of 1.	}	1
B	Second part of 1.		
D	Second chorus.		
B	First part of Repeat 1.	}	Repeat 1
C	Second part of Repeat 1.		
E	Abridged chorus.		
C	Fragment of Repeat 2	}	Fragment of Repeat 2

3. Breathless quality in voices from beginning of Repeat 1 and increasing to end of play.

4. Changed order of speeches in repeat as far as this is compatible with unchanged continuity for actors. E.g. the order of interrogation w 1, w 2, M, w 2, w 1, M at opening of 1 becomes w 2, w 1, M, w 2, M, w 1 at opening of repeat, and so on if and as desired.

Film



Written in English in April 1963. Commissioned for the Evergreen Theater, New York. Filmed in New York in the summer of 1964 and first shown publicly in 1965 at the New York Film Festival. First published by Faber and Faber, London, in 1967.

This is the original project for *Film*. No attempt has been made to bring it into line with the finished work. The one considerable departure from what was imagined concerns the opening sequence in the street. This was first shot as given, then replaced by a simplified version in which only the indispensable couple is retained. For the rest the shooting followed closely the indications of the script.

Throughout first two parts all perception is E's. E is the camera. But in third part there is O's perception of room and contents and at the same time E's continued perception of O. This poses a problem of images which I cannot solve without technical help. See below, note 8.

The film is divided into three parts. 1. The street (about eight minutes). 2. The stairs (about five minutes). 3. The room (about seventeen minutes).

The film is entirely silent except for the 'sssh!' in part one.

Climate of film comic and unreal. O should invite laughter throughout by his way of moving. Unreality of street scene (see notes to this section).

## GENERAL

### *Esse est percipi.*

All extraneous perception suppressed, animal, human, divine, self-perception maintains in being.

Search of non-being in flight from extraneous perception breaking down in inescapability of self-perception.

No truth value attaches to above, regarded as of merely structural and dramatic convenience.

In order to be figured in this situation the protagonist is sundered into object (O) and eye (E), the former in flight, the latter in pursuit.

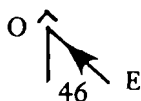
It will not be clear until end of film that pursuing perceiver is not extraneous, but self.

Until end of film O is perceived by E from behind and at an angle not exceeding 45°. Convention: O enters *percipi* = experiences anguish of perceivedness, only when this angle is exceeded.

O not in perceivedness:



O in perceivedness:



E is therefore at pains, throughout pursuit, to keep within this 'angle of immunity' and only exceeds it (1) inadvertently at beginning of part one when he first sights O (2) inadvertently at beginning of part two when he follows O into vestibule and (3) deliberately at end of part three when O is cornered. In first two cases he hastily reduces angle.

## OUTLINE

### 1. The street

Dead straight. No sidestreets or intersections. Period: about 1929. Early summer morning. Small factory district. Moderate animation of workers going unhurriedly to work. All going in same direction and all in couples. No automobiles. Two bicycles ridden by men with girl passengers (on crossbar). One cab, cantering nag, driver standing brandishing whip. All persons in opening scene to be shown in some way perceiving—one another, an object, a shop window, a poster, etc., i.e. all contentedly in *percipere* and *percipi*. First view of above is by E motionless and searching with his eyes for O. He may be supposed at street edge of wide (4 yards) sidewalk. O finally comes into view hastening blindly along sidewalk, hugging the wall on his left, in opposite direction to all the others. Long dark overcoat (whereas all others in light summer dress) with collar up, hat pulled down over eyes, briefcase in left hand, right hand shielding exposed side of face. He storms along in comic foundered precipitancy. E's searching eye, turning left from street to sidewalk, picks him up at an angle exceeding that of immunity (O's unperceivedness according to convention) (1). O, entering per-

ceivedness, reacts (after just sufficient onward movement for his gait to be established) by halting and cringing aside towards wall. E immediately draws back to close the angle (2) and O, released from perceivedness, hurries on. E lets him get about 10 yards ahead and then starts after him (3). Street elements from now on incidental (except for episode of couple) in the sense that only registered in so far as they happen to enter field of pursuing eye fixed on O.

Episode of couple (4). In his blind haste O jostles an elderly couple of shabby genteel aspect, standing on sidewalk, peering together at a newspaper. They should be discovered by E a few yards before collision. The woman is holding a pet monkey under her left arm. E follows O an instant as he hastens blindly on, then registers couple recovering from shock, comes up with them, passes them slightly and halts to observe them (5). Having recovered they turn and look after O, the woman raising a lorgnon to her eyes, the man taking off his pince-nez fastened to his coat by a ribbon. They then look at each other, she lowering her lorgnon, he resuming his pince-nez. He opens his mouth to vituperate. She checks him with a gesture and soft 'sssh!' He turns again, taking off his pince-nez, to look after O. She feels the gaze of E upon them and turns, raising her lorgnon, to look at him. She nudges her companion who turns back towards her, resuming his pince-nez, follows direction of her gaze and, taking off his pince-nez, looks at E. As they both stare at E the expression gradually comes over their faces which will be that of the flower-woman in the stairs scene and that of O at the end of film, an expression only to be described as corresponding to an agony of perceivedness. Indifference of monkey, looking up into face of its mistress. They close their eyes, she lowering her lorgnon, and hasten away in direction of all the others, i.e. that opposed to O and E (6).

E turns back towards O by now far ahead and out of sight. Immediate acceleration of E in pursuit (blurred transit of encountered elements). O comes into view, grows rapidly larger until E settles down behind him at same angle and remove as before. O disappears suddenly through open housedoor on his left. Immediate acceleration of E who comes up with O in vestibule at foot of stairs.

## 2. Stairs

Vestibule about 4 yards square with stairs at inner righthand angle. Relation of streetdoor to stairs such that E's first perception of O (E near door, O motionless at foot of stairs, right hand on banister, body shaken by panting) is from an angle a little exceeding that of immunity. O, entering perceivedness (according to convention), transfers right hand from banister to exposed side of face and cringes aside towards wall on his left. E immediately draws back to close the angle and O, released, resumes his pose at foot of stairs, hand on banister. O mounts a few steps (E remaining near door), raises head, listens, redescends hastily backwards and crouches down in angle of stairs and wall on his right, invisible to one descending (7). E registers him there, then transfers to stairs. A frail old woman appears on bottom landing. She carries a tray of flowers slung from her neck by a strap. She descends slowly, with fumbling feet, one hand steadying the tray, the other holding the banister. Absorbed by difficulty of descent she does not become aware of E until she is quite down and making for the door. She halts and looks full at E. Gradually same expression as that of couple in street. She closes her eyes, then sinks to the ground and lies with face in scattered flowers. E lingers on this a moment, then transfers to where O last registered. He is no longer there, but hastening up the stairs. E transfers to stairs and picks up O as he reaches first landing. Bound forwards and up of E who overtakes O on second flight and is literally at his heels when he reaches second landing and opens with key door of room. They enter room together, E turning with O as he turns to lock the door behind him.

## 3. The room

Here we assume problem of dual perception solved and enter O's perception (8). E must so manoeuvre throughout what follows, until investment proper, that O is always seen from behind, at most convenient remove, and from an angle never exceeding that of immunity, i.e. preserved from perceivedness.

Small barely furnished room (9). Side by side on floor a large cat and small dog. Unreal quality. Motionless till ejected. Cat bigger than dog. On a table against wall a parrot in a cage

and a goldfish in a bowl. This room sequence falls into three parts.

1. Preparation of room (occlusion of window and mirror, ejection of dog and cat, destruction of God's image, occlusion of parrot and goldfish).

2. Period in rocking-chair. Inspection and destruction of photographs.

3. Final investment of O by E and dénouement.

1. O stands near door with case in hand and takes in room. Succession of images: dog and cat, side by side, staring at him; mirror; window; couch with rug; dog and cat staring at him; parrot and goldfish, parrot staring at him; rocking-chair; dog and cat staring at him. He sets down case, approaches window from side and draws curtain. He turns towards dog and cat, still staring at him, then goes to couch and takes up rug. He turns towards dog and cat, still staring at him. Holding rug before him he approaches mirror from side and covers it with rug. He turns towards parrot and goldfish, parrot still staring at him. He goes to rocking-chair, inspects it from front. Insistent image of curiously carved headrest (10). He turns towards dog and cat still staring at him. He puts them out of room (11). He takes up case and is moving towards chair when rug falls from mirror. He drops briefcase, hastens to wall between couch and mirror, follows walls past window, approaches mirror from side, picks up rug and, holding it before him, covers mirror with it again. He returns to briefcase, picks it up, goes to chair, sits down and is opening case when disturbed by print, pinned to wall before him, of the face of God the Father, the eyes staring at him severely. He sets down case on floor to his left, gets up and inspects print. Insistent image of wall, paper hanging off in strips (10). He tears print from wall, tears it in four, throws down the pieces and grinds them underfoot. He turns back to chair, image again of its curious headrest, sits down, image again of tattered wall-paper, takes case on his knees, takes out a folder, sets down case on floor to his left and is opening folder when disturbed by parrot's eye. He lays folder on case, gets up, takes off overcoat, goes to parrot, close up of parrot's eye, covers cage with coat, goes back to chair, image again of headrest, sits down, image again of tattered wall-paper, takes up

folder and is opening it when disturbed by fish's eye. He lays folder on case, gets up, goes to fish, close-up of fish's eye, extends coat to cover bowl as well as cage, goes back to chair, image again of headrest, sits down, image again of wall, takes up folder, takes off hat and lays it on case to his left. Scant hair or bald to facilitate identification of narrow black elastic encircling head.

When O sits up and back his head is framed in headrest which is a narrower extension of backrest. Throughout scene of inspection and destruction of photographs E may be supposed immediately behind chair looking down over O's left shoulder (12).

2. O opens folder, takes from it a packet of photographs (13), lays folder on case and begins to inspect photographs. He inspects them in order 1 to 7. When he has finished with 1 he lays it on his knees, inspects 2, lays it on top of 1, and so on, so that when he has finished inspecting them all 1 will be at the bottom of the pile and 7—or rather 6, for he does not lay down 7—at the top. He gives about six seconds each to 1-4, about twice as long to 5 and 6 (trembling hands). Looking at 6 he touches with forefinger little girl's face. After six seconds of 7 he tears it in four and drops pieces on floor on his left. He takes up 6 from top of pile on his knees, looks at it again for about three seconds, tears it in four and drops pieces on floor to his left. So on for the others, looking at each again for about three seconds before tearing it up. 1 must be on tougher mount for he has difficulty in tearing it across. Straining hands. He finally succeeds, drops pieces on floor and sits, rocking slightly, hands holding armrests (14).

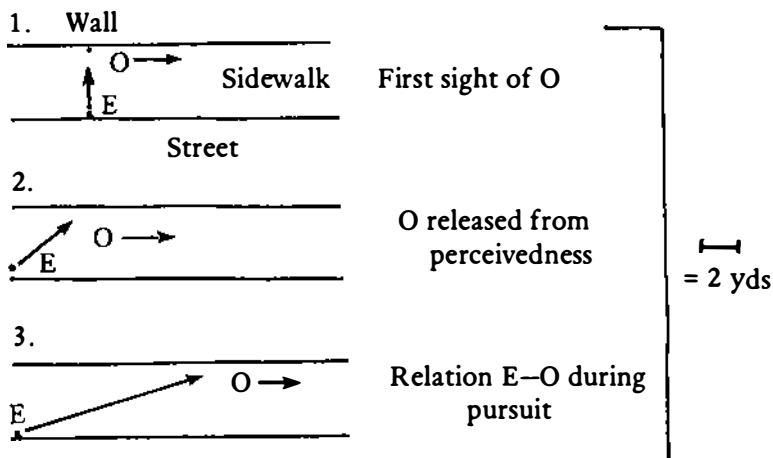
3. Investment proper. Perception from now on, if dual perception feasible, E's alone, except perception of E by O at end. E moves a little back (image of headrest from back), then starts circling to his left, approaches maximum angle and halts. From this open angle, beyond which he will enter *percipi*, O can be seen beginning to doze off. His visible hand relaxes on armrest, his head nods and falls forward, the rock approaches stillness. E advances, opening angle beyond limit of immunity, his gaze pierces the light sleep and O starts awake. The start revives the rock, immediately arrested by foot to floor. Tension of hand on armrest. Turning his head to right, O cringes away from per-

ceivedness. E draws back to reduce the angle and after a moment, reassured, O turns back front and resumes his pose. The rock resumes, dies down slowly as O dozes off again. E now begins a much wider encirclement. Images of curtained window, walls and shrouded mirror to indicate his path and that he is not yet looking at O. Then brief image of O seen by E from well beyond the angle of immunity, i.e. from near the table with shrouded bowl and cage. O is now seen to be fast asleep, his head sunk on his chest and his hands, fallen from the armrests, limply dangling. E resumes his cautious approach. Images of shrouded bowl and cage and tattered wall adjoining, with same indication as before. Halt and brief image, not far short of full-face, of O still fast asleep. E advances last few yards along tattered wall and halts directly in front of O. Long image of O, full-face, against ground of headrest, sleeping. E's gaze pierces the sleep, O starts awake, stares up at E. Patch over O's left eye now seen for the first time. Rock revived by start, stilled at once by foot to ground. Hand clutches armrests. O half starts from chair, then stiffens, staring up at E. Gradually that look. Cut to E, of whom this very first image (face only, against ground of tattered wall). It is O's face (with patch) but with very different expression, impossible to describe, neither severity nor benignity, but rather acute *intentness*. A big nail is visible near left temple (patch side). Long image of the unblinking gaze. Cut back to O, still half risen, staring up, with that look. O closes his eyes and falls back in chair, starting off rock. He covers his face with his hands. Image of O rocking, his head in his hands but not yet bowed. Cut back to E. As before. Cut back to O. He sits, bowed forward, his head in his hands, gently rocking. Hold it as the rocking dies down.

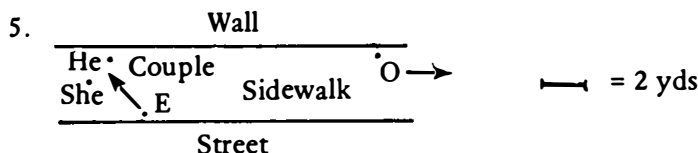
E N D



## NOTES

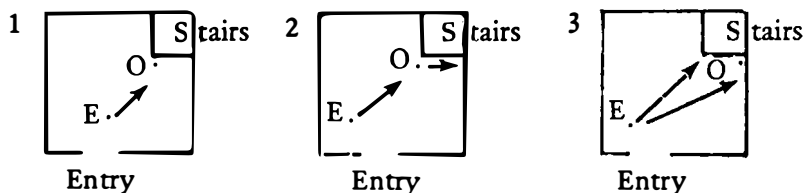


4. The purpose of this episode, undefendable except as a dramatic convenience, is to suggest as soon as possible unbearable quality of E's scrutiny. Reinforced by episode of flower-woman in stairs sequence.

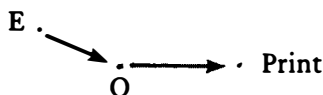


6. Expression of this episode, like that of animals' ejection in part three, should be as precisely stylized as possible. The purpose of the monkey, either unaware of E or indifferent to him, is to anticipate behaviour of animals in part three, attentive to O exclusively.

7. Suggestion for vestibule with (1) O in *percipi* (2) released (3) hiding from flower-woman. Note that even when E exceeds angle of immunity O's face never really seen because of immediate turn aside and (here) hand to shield face.

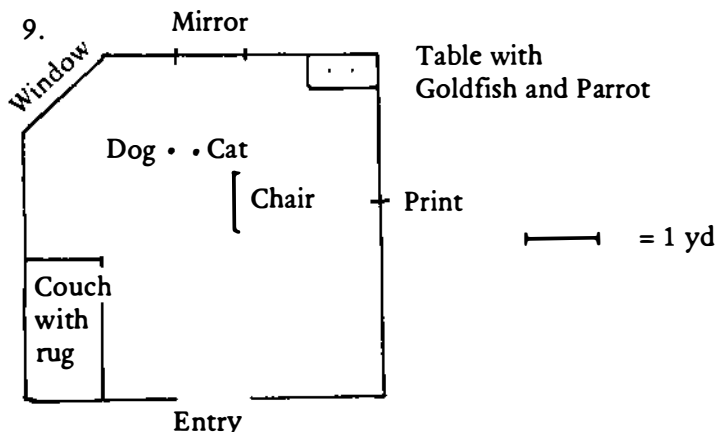


8. Up till now the perceptions of O, hastening *blindly* to illusory sanctuary, have been neglected and must in fact have been negligible. But in the room, until he falls asleep and the investment begins, they must be recorded. And at the same time E's perceiving of O must continue to be given. E is concerned only with O, not with the room, or only incidentally with the room in so far as its elements happen to enter the field of his gaze fastened on O. We see O in the room thanks to E's perceiving and the room itself thanks to O's perceiving. In other words this room sequence, up to the moment of O's falling asleep, is composed of two independent sets of images. I feel that any attempt to express them in simultaneity (composite images, double frame, superimposition, etc.) must prove unsatisfactory. The presentation in a single image of O's perception of the print, for example, and E's perception of O perceiving it—no doubt feasible technically—would perhaps



make impossible for the spectator a clear apprehension of either. The solution might be in a succession of images of different *quality*, corresponding on the one hand to E's perception of O and on the other to O's perception of the room. This difference of quality might perhaps be sought in different degrees of development, the passage from the one to the other being from greater to lesser and lesser to greater definition or luminosity. The dissimilarity, however obtained, would have to be flagrant. Having been up till now exclusively in the E quality, we would suddenly pass, with O's first survey of the room, into this quite different O quality. Then back to the E quality when O is shown moving to the window. And so on throughout the sequence, switching from the one to the other as required. Were this the solution adopted it might be desirable to establish, by means of brief sequences, the O quality in parts one and two.

This seems to be the chief problem of the film, though I perhaps exaggerate its difficulty through technical ignorance.

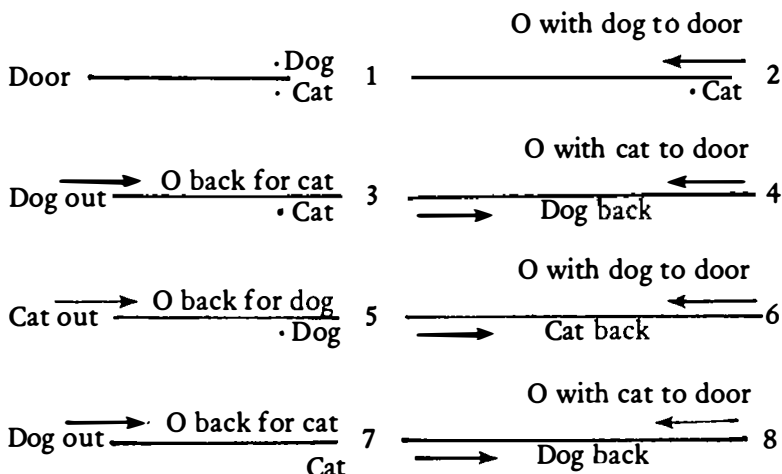


Suggestion for room.

This obviously cannot be O's room. It may be supposed it is his mother's room, which he has not visited for many years and is now to occupy momentarily, to look after the pets, until she comes out of hospital. This has no bearing on the film and need not be elucidated.

10. At close of film face E and face O can only be distinguished (1) By different expressions (2) by fact of O looking up and E down and (3) by difference of ground (for O headrest of chair, for E wall). Hence insistence on headrest and tattered wall.

11. Foolish suggestion for eviction of cat and dog. Also see Note 6.





Mortar-board under arm. On a platform, receiving scroll from Rector. Smiling. Section of public watching.

5. The same. 21 years. Bareheaded. Smiling. Small moustache. Arm round fiancée. A young man takes a snap of them.

6. The same. 25 years. Newly enlisted. Bareheaded. Uniform. Bigger moustache. Smiling. Holding a little girl in his arms. She looks into his face, exploring it with finger.

7. The same. 30 years. Looking over 40. Wearing hat and overcoat. Patch over left eye. Cleanshaven. Grim expression.

14. Profit by rocking-chair to emotionalize inspection, e.g. gentle steady rock for 1 to 4, rock stilled (foot to ground) after two seconds of 5, rock resumed between 5 and 6, rock stilled after two seconds of 6, rock resumed after 6 and for 7 as for 1-4.

# The Old Tune

An adaptation

An English adaptation of *La Manivelle*, a play for radio by Robert Pinget, which was first published in France by Editions de Minuit, Paris, and by John Calder (Publishers), London, in 1963.

*Background of street noises. In the foreground a barrel-organ playing an old tune. 20 seconds. The mechanism jams. Thumps on the box to set it off again. No result.*

GORMAN: [*Old man's cracked voice, frequent pauses for breath even in the middle of a word, speech indistinct for want of front teeth, whistling sibilants.*] There we go, bust again. [*Sound of lid raised. Scraping inside box.*] Cursed bloody music! [*Scraping. Creaking of handle. Thumps on box. The mechanism starts off again.*] Ah about time! [*Tune resumes. 10 seconds. Sound of faltering steps approaching.*]

CREAM: [*Old man's cracked voice, stumbling speech, pauses in the middle of sentences, whistling sibilants due to ill-fitting denture.*] —Well, if it isn't—[*The tune stops.*]

—Gorman my old friend Gorman, do you recognize me  
Cream father of the judge, Cream you remember Cream.

GORMAN: Mr Cream! Well, I'll be! Mr Cream! [*Pause.*] Sit you down, sit you down, here, there. [*Pause.*] Great weather for the time of day Mr Cream, eh.

CREAM: My old friend Gorman, it's a sight to see you again after all these years, all these years.

GORMAN: Yes indeed, Mr Cream, yes indeed, that's the way it is. [*Pause.*] And you, tell me.

CREAM: I was living with my daughter and she died, then I came here to live with the other.

GORMAN: Miss Miss what?

CREAM: Bertha. You know she got married, yes, Moody the nurseryman, two children.

GORMAN: Grand match, Mr Cream, grand match, more power to you. But tell me then the poor soul she was taken then was she.

CREAM: Malignant, tried everything, lingered three years, that's



how it goes, the young pop off and the old hang on.

GORMAN: Ah dear oh dear Mr Cream, dear oh dear.

[Pause.]

CREAM: And you your wife?

GORMAN: Still in it, still in it, but for how long.

CREAM: Poor Daisy yes.

GORMAN: Had she children?

CREAM: Three, three children, Johnny, the eldest, then Ronnie, then a baby girl, Queenie, my favourite, Queenie, a baby girl.

GORMAN: Darling name.

CREAM: She's so quick for her years you wouldn't believe it, do you know what she came out with to me the other day ah only the other day poor Daisy.

GORMAN: And your son-in-law?

CREAM: Eh?

GORMAN: Ah dear oh dear, Mr Cream, dear oh dear. [Pause.]

Ah yes children that's the way it is. [Roar of motor engine.]

They'd tear you to flitters with their flaming machines.

CREAM: Shocking crossing, sudden death.

GORMAN: As soon as look at you, tear you to flitters.

CREAM: Ah in our time Gorman this was the outskirts, you remember, peace and quiet.

GORMAN: Do I remember, fields it was, fields, bluebells, over there, on the bank, bluebells. When you think . . .

[Suddenly complete silence. 10 seconds. The tune resumes, falters, stops. Silence. The street noises resume.] Ah the horses, the carriages, and the barouches, ah the barouches, all that's the dim distant past, Mr Cream.

CREAM: And the broughams, remember the broughams, there was style for you, the broughams.

[Pause.]

GORMAN: The first car I remember I saw it here, here, on the corner, a Pic-Pic she was.

CREAM: Not a Pic-Pic, Gorman, not a Pic-Pic, a Dee Dyan Button.

GORMAN: A Pic-Pic, a Pic-Pic, don't I remember it well, just as I was coming out of Swan's the bookseller's beyond there on the corner, Swan's the bookseller's that was, just as I

was coming out with a rise of fourpence ah there wasn't much money in it in those days.

CREAM: A Dee Dyan, a Dee Dyan.

GORMAN: You had to work for your living in those days, it wasn't at six you knocked off, nor at seven neither, eight it was, eight o'clock, yes by God. [*Pause.*] Where was I? [*Pause.*] Ah yes eight o'clock as I was coming out of Swan's there was the crowd gathered and the car wheeling round the bend.

CREAM: A Dee Dyan Gorman, a Dee Dyan, I can remember the man himself from Wougham he was the vintner what's this his name was.

GORMAN: Bush, Seymour Bush.

CREAM: Bush that's the man.

GORMAN: One way or t'other, Mr Cream, one way or t'other no matter it wasn't the likes of nowadays, their flaming machines they'd tear you to shreds.

CREAM: My dear Gorman do you know what it is I'm going to tell you, all this speed do you know what it is has the whole place ruinated, no living with it any more, the whole place ruinated, even the weather. [*Roar of engine.*] Ah when you think of the springs in our time remember the springs we had, the heat there was in them, and the summers remember the summers would destroy you with the heat.

GORMAN: Do I remember, there was one year back there seems like yesterday must have been round 95 when we were still out at Cruddy, didn't we water the roof of the house every evening with the rubber jet to have a bit of cool in the night, yes summer 95.

CREAM: That would surprise me Gorman, remember in those days the rubber hose was a great luxury a great luxury, wasn't till after the war the rubber hose.

GORMAN: You may be right.

CREAM: No may be about it. I tell you the first we ever had round here was in Drummond's place, old Da Drummond, that was after the war 1920 maybe, still very exorbitant it was at the time, don't you remember watering out of the can you must with that bit of garden you had didn't you,

wasn't it your father owned that patch out on the Marston Road.

GORMAN: The Sheen Road Mr Cream but true for you the watering you're right there, me and me hose how are you when we had no running water at the time or had we.

CREAM: The Sheen Road, that's the one out beyond Shackleton's sawpit.

GORMAN: We didn't get it in till 1925 now it comes back to me the wash-hand basin and jug.

[*Roar of engine.*]

CREAM: The Sheen Road you saw what they've done to that I was out on it yesterday with the son-in-law, you saw what they've done our little gardens and the grand sloe hedges.

GORMAN: Yes all those gazebos springing up like thistles there's trash for you if you like, collapse if you look at them am I right.

CREAM: Collapse is the word, when you think of the good stone made the cathedrals nothing to come up to it.

GORMAN: And on top of all no foundations, no cellars, no nothing, how are you going to live without cellars I ask you, on piles if you don't mind, piles, like in the lake age, there's progress for you.

CREAM: Ah Gorman you haven't changed a hair, just the same old wag he always was. Getting on for seventy-five is it?

GORMAN: Seventy-three, seventy-three, soon due for the knock.

CREAM: Now Gorman none of that, none of that, and me turning seventy-six, you're a young man Gorman.

GORMAN: Ah Mr Cream, always a great one for a crack.

CREAM: Here Gorman while we're at it have a fag, here.

[*Pause.*] The daughter must have whipped them again, doesn't want me to be smoking, mind her own damn business. [*Pause.*] Ah I have them, here, have one.

GORMAN: I wouldn't leave you short.

CREAM: Short for God's sake, here, have one.

[*Pause.*]

GORMAN: They're packed so tight they won't come out.

CREAM: Take hold of the packet. [*Pause.*] Ah what ails me all bloody thumbs. Can you pick it up.

[*Pause.*]

GORMAN: Here we are. [*Pause.*] Ah yes a nice puff now and again but it's not what it was their gaspers now not worth a fiddler's, remember in the forces the shag remember the black shag that was tobacco for you.

CREAM: Ah the black shag my dear Gorman the black shag, fit for royalty the black shag fit for royalty. [*Pause.*] Have you a light on you.

GORMAN: Well then I haven't, the wife doesn't like me to be smoking.  
[*Pause.*]

CREAM: Must have whipped my lighter too the bitch, my old tinder jizzer.

GORMAN: Well no matter I'll keep it and have a draw later on.

CREAM: The bitch sure as a gun she must have whipped it too that's going beyond the beyonds, beyond the beyonds, nothing you can call your own. [*Pause.*] Perhaps we might ask this gentleman. [*Footsteps approach.*] Beg your pardon Sir trouble you for a light.  
[*Footsteps recede.*]

GORMAN: Ah the young nowadays Mr Cream very wrapped up they are the young nowadays, no thought for the old. When you think, when you think . . . [*Suddenly complete silence. 10 seconds. The tune resumes, falters, stops. Silence. The street noises resume.*] Where were we?  
[*Pause.*] Ah yes the forces, you went in in 1900, 1900, 1902, am I right?

CREAM: 1903, 1903, and you 1906 was it?

GORMAN: 1906 yes at Chatham.

CREAM: The Gunners?

GORMAN: The Foot, the Foot.

CREAM: But the Foot wasn't Chatham don't you remember, there it was the Gunners, you must have been at Caterham, Caterham, the Foot.

GORMAN: Chatham I tell you, isn't it like yesterday, Morrison's pub on the corner.

CREAM: Harrison's. Harrison's Oak Lounge, do you think I don't know Chatham. I used to go there on holiday with Mrs Cream, I know Chatham backwards Gorman, inside and out, Harrison's Oak Lounge on the corner of what was

the name of the street, on a rise it was, it'll come back to me, do you think I don't know Harrison's Oak Lounge there on the corner of dammit I'll forget my own name next and the square it'll come back to me.

GORMAN: Morrison or Harrison we were at Chatham.

CREAM: That would surprise me greatly, the Gunners were Chatham do you not remember that?

GORMAN: I was in the Foot, at Chatham, in the Foot.

CREAM: The Foot, that's right the Foot at Chatham.

GORMAN: That's what I'm telling you, Chatham the Foot.

CREAM: That would surprise me greatly, you must have it mucked up with the war, the mobilization.

GORMAN: The mobilization have a heart it's as clear in my mind as yesterday the mobilization, we were shifted straight away to Chesham, was it, no, Chester, that's the place, Chester, there was Morrison's pub on the corner and a chamber-maid what was her name, Joan, Jean, Jane, the very start of the war when we still didn't believe it, Chester, ah those are happy memories.

CREAM: Happy memories, happy memories, I wouldn't go so far as that.

GORMAN: I mean the start up, the start up at Chatham, we still didn't believe it, and that chamber-maid what was her name it'll come back to me. *[Pause.]* And your son by the same token.

*[Roar of engine.]*

CREAM: Eh?

GORMAN: Your son the judge.

CREAM: He has rheumatism.

GORMAN: Ah rheumatism, rheumatism runs in the blood Mr Cream.

CREAM: What are you talking about, I never had rheumatism.

GORMAN: When I think of my poor old mother, only sixty and couldn't move a muscle. *[Roar of engine.]* Rheumatism they never found the remedy for it yet, atom rockets is all they care about, I can thank my lucky stars touch wood. *[Pause.]* Your son yes he's in the papers the Carton affair, the way he managed that case he can be a proud man, the wife read it again in this morning's *Lark*.

CREAM: What do you mean the Barton affair.

GORMAN: The Carton affair Mr Cream, the sex fiend, on the Assizes.

CREAM: That's not him, he's not the Assizes my boy isn't, he's the County Courts, you mean Judge . . . Judge . . . what's this his name was in the Barton affair.

GORMAN: Ah I thought it was him.

CREAM: Certainly not I tell you, the County Courts my boy, not the Assizes, the County Courts.

GORMAN: Oh you know the Courts and the Assizes it was always all six of one to me.

CREAM: Ah but there's a big difference Mr Gorman, a power of difference, a civil case and a criminal one, quite another how d'you do, what would a civil case be doing in the *Lark* now I ask you.

GORMAN: All that machinery you know I never got the swing of it and now it's all six of one to me.

CREAM: Were you never in the Courts?

GORMAN: I was once all right when my niece got her divorce that was when was it now thirty years ago yes thirty years, I was greatly put about I can tell you the poor little thing divorced after two years of married life, my sister was never the same after it.

CREAM: Divorce is the curse of society you can take it from me, the curse of society, ask my boy if you don't believe me.

GORMAN: Ah there I'm with you the curse of society look at what it leads up to, when you think my niece had a little girl as good as never knew her father.

CREAM: Did she get alimony.

GORMAN: She was put out to board and wasted away to a shadow, that's a nice thing for you.

CREAM: Did the mother get alimony.

GORMAN: Divil the money. [*Pause.*] So that's your son ladling out the divorces.

CREAM: As a judge he must, as a father it goes to his heart.

GORMAN: Has he children.

CREAM: Well in a way he had one, little Herbert, lived to be four months then passed away, how long is it now, how long is it now.

GORMAN: Ah dear oh dear, Mr Cream, dear oh dear and did they never have another?

[*Roar of engine.*]

CREAM: Eh?

GORMAN: Other children.

CREAM: Didn't I tell you, I have my daughters' children, my two daughters. [*Pause.*] Talking of that your man there Barton the sex boyo isn't that nice carryings on for you showing himself off like that without a stitch on him to little children might just as well have been ours Gorman, our own little grandchildren.

[*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: Mrs Cream must be a proud woman too to be a grandmother.

CREAM: Mrs Cream is in her coffin these twenty years Mr Gorman.

GORMAN: Oh God forgive me what am I talking about, I'm getting you wouldn't know what I'd be talking about, that's right you were saying you were with Miss Daisy.

CREAM: With my daughter Bertha, Mr Gorman, my daughter Bertha, Mrs Rupert Moody.

GORMAN: Your daughter Bertha that's right so she married Moody, gallous garage they have there near the slaughter-house.

CREAM: Not him, his brother the nursery-man.

GORMAN: Grand match, more power to you, have they children?  
[*Roar of engine.*]

CREAM: Eh?

GORMAN: Children.

CREAM: Two dotey little boys, little Johnny I mean Hubert and the other, the other.

GORMAN: But tell me your daughter poor soul she was taken then was she. [*Pause.*] That cigarette while we're at it might try this gentleman. [*Footsteps approach.*] Beg your pardon Sir trouble you for a light. [*Footsteps recede.*] Ah the young are very wrapped up Mr Cream.

CREAM: Little Hubert and the other, the other, what's this his name is. [*Pause.*] And Mrs Gorman.

GORMAN: Still in it.

CREAM: Ah you're the lucky jim Gorman, you're the lucky jim, Mrs Gorman by gad, fine figure of a woman Mrs Gorman, fine handsome woman.

GORMAN: Handsome, all right, but you know, age. We have our health thanks be to God touch wood. [*Pause.*] You know what it is Mr Cream, that'd be the way to pop off chatting away like this of a sunny morning.

CREAM: None of that now Gorman, who's talking of popping off with the health you have as strong as an ox and a comfortable wife, ah I'd give ten years of mine to have her back do you hear me, living with strangers isn't the same.

GORMAN: Miss Bertha's so sweet and good you're on the pig's back for God's sake, on the pig's back.

CREAM: It's not the same you can take it from me, can't call your soul your own, look at the cigarettes, the lighter.

GORMAN: Miss Bertha so sweet and good.

CREAM: Sweet and good, all right, but dammit if she doesn't take me for a doddering old drivelling dotard. [*Pause.*] What did I do with those cigarettes?

GORMAN: And tell me your poor dear daughter-in-law what am I saying your daughter-in-law.

CREAM: My daughter-in-law, my daughter-in-law, what about my daughter-in-law.

GORMAN: She had private means, it was said she had private means.

CREAM: Private means ah they were the queer private means, all swallied up in the war every ha'penny do you hear me, all in the bank the private means not as much land as you'd tether a goat. [*Pause.*] Land Gorman there's no security like land but that woman you might as well have been talking to the bedpost, a mule she was that woman was.

GORMAN: Ah well it's only human nature, you can't always pierce into the future.

CREAM: Now now Gorman don't be telling me, land wouldn't you live all your life off a bit of land damn it now wouldn't you any fool knows that unless they take the fantasy to go and build on the moon the way they say, ah that's all fantasy Gorman you can take it from me all



fantasy and delusion, they'll smart for it one of these days by God they will.

GORMAN: You don't believe in the moon what they're experimenting at.

CREAM: My dear Gorman the moon is the moon and cheese is cheese what do they take us for, didn't it always exist the moon wasn't it always there as large as life and what did it ever mean only fantasy and delusion Gorman, fantasy and delusion. [*Pause.*] Or is it our forefathers were a lot of old bags maybe now is that on the cards I ask you, Bacon, Wellington, Washington, for them the moon was always in their opinion damn it I ask you you'd think to hear them talk no one ever bothered his arse with the moon before, make a cat swallow his whiskers they think they've discovered the moon as if as if. [*Pause.*] What was I driving at? [*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: So you're against progress are you.

CREAM: Progress, progress, progress is all very fine and grand, there's such a thing I grant you, but it's scientific, progress, scientific, the moon's not progress, lunacy, lunacy.

GORMAN: Ah there I'm with you progress is scientific and the moon, the moon, that's the way it is.

CREAM: The wisdom of the ancients that's the trouble they don't give a rap or a snap for it any more, and the world going to rack and ruin, wouldn't it be better now to go back to the old maxims and not be gallivanting off killing one another in China over the moon, ah when I think of my poor father.

GORMAN: Your father that reminds me I knew your father well. [*Roar of engine.*] There was a man for you old Mr Cream, what he had to say he lashed out with it straight from the shoulder and no humming and hawing, now it comes back to me one year there on the town council my father told me must have been wait now till I see 95, 95 or 6, a short while before he resigned, 95 that's it the year of the great frost.

CREAM: Ah I beg your pardon, the great frost was 93 I'd just turned ten, 93 Gorman the great frost. [*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: My father used to tell the story how Mr Cream went

hell for leather for the mayor who was he in those days, must have been Overend, yes Overend.

CREAM: Ah there you're mistaken my dear Gorman, my father went on the council with Overend in 97, January 97.

GORMAN: That may be, that may be, but it must have been 95 or 6 just the same seeing as how my father went off in 96, April 96, there was a set against him and he had to give in his resignation.

CREAM: Well then your father was off when it happened, all I know is mine went on with Overend in 97 the year Marrable was burnt out.

GORMAN: Ah Marrable it wasn't five hundred yards from the door five hundred yards Mr Cream, I can still hear my poor mother saying to us ah poor dear Maria she was saying to me again only last night, January 96 that's right.

CREAM: 97 I tell you, 97, the year my father was voted on.

GORMAN: That may be but just the same the clout he gave Overend that's right now I have it.

CREAM: The clout was Oscar Bliss the butcher in Pollox Street.

GORMAN: The butcher in Pollox Street, there's a memory from the dim distant past for you, didn't he have a daughter do you remember.

CREAM: Helen, Helen Bliss, pretty girl, she'd be my age, 83 saw the light of day.

GORMAN: And Rosie Plumpton bonny Rosie staring up at the lid these thirty years she must be now and Molly Berry and Eva what was her name Eva Hart that's right Eva Hart didn't she marry a Crumplin.

CREAM: Her brother, her brother Alfred married Gertie Crumplin great one for the lads she was you remember, Gertie great one for the lads.

GORMAN: Do I remember, Gertie Crumplin great bit of skirt by God, hee hee hee great bit of skirt.

CREAM: You old dog you!

[*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: And Nelly Crowther there's one came to a nasty end.

CREAM: Simon's daughter that's right, the parents were greatly to blame you can take it from me.

GORMAN: They reared her well then just the same bled them-

selves white for her so they did, poor Mary used to tell us all we were very close in those days lived on the same landing you know, poor Mary yes she used to say what a drain it was having the child boarding out at Saint Theresa's can you imagine, very classy, daughters of the gentry Mr Cream, even taught French they were the young ladies.

CREAM: Isn't that what I'm telling you, reared her like a princess of the blood they did, French now I ask you, French.

GORMAN: Would you blame them Mr Cream, the best of parents, you can't deny it, education.

CREAM: French, French, isn't that what I'm saying.

[*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: They denied themselves everything, take the bits out of their mouths they would for their Nelly.

CREAM: Don't be telling me they had her on a string all the same the said young lady, remember that Holy Week 1912 was it or 13.

[*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: Eh?

CREAM: When you think of Simon the man he was don't be telling me that. [*Pause.*] Holy Week 1913 now it all comes back to me is that like as if they had her on a string what she did then.

GORMAN: Peace to her ashes Mr Cream.

CREAM: Principles, Gorman, principles without principles I ask you. [*Roar of engine.*] Wasn't there an army man in it.

GORMAN: Eh?

CREAM: Wasn't there an army man in it?

GORMAN: In the car?

CREAM: Eh?

GORMAN: An army man in the car?

CREAM: In the Crowther blow-up.

[*Roar of engine.*]

GORMAN: You mean the Lootnant St John Fitzball.

CREAM: St John Fitzball that's the man, wasn't he mixed up in it?

GORMAN: They were keeping company all right. [*Pause.*] He died in 14. Wounds.

CREAM: And his aunt Miss Hester.

GORMAN: Dead then these how many years is it now how many.

CREAM: She was a great old one, a little on the high and mighty side perhaps you might say.

GORMAN: Take fire like gunpowder but a heart of gold if you only knew. [*Roar of engine.*] Her niece has a chip of the old block wouldn't you say.

CREAM: Her niece? No recollection.

GORMAN: No recollection, Miss Victoria, come on now, she was to have married an American and she's in the Turrets yet.

CREAM: I thought they'd sold.

GORMAN: Sell the Turrets is it they'll never sell, the family seat three centuries and maybe more, three centuries Mr Cream.

CREAM: You might be their historiographer Gorman to hear you talk, what you don't know about those people.

GORMAN: Histyriographer no Mr Cream I wouldn't go so far as that but Miss Victoria right enough I know her through and through we stop and have a gas like when her aunt was still in it, ah yes nothing hoity-toity about Miss Victoria you can take my word she has a great chip of the old block.

CREAM: Hadn't she a brother.

GORMAN: The Lootnant yes, died in 14. Wounds.  
[*Deafening roar of engine.*]

CREAM: The bloody cars such a thing as a quiet chat I ask you.  
[*Pause.*] Well I'll be slipping along I'm holding you back from your work.

GORMAN: Slipping along what would you want slipping along and we only after meeting for once in a blue moon.

CREAM: Well then just a minute and smoke a quick one.  
[*Pause.*] What did I do with those cigarettes? [*Pause.*] You fire ahead don't mind me.

GORMAN: When you think, when you think . . .

[*Suddenly complete silence. 10 seconds. The tune resumes. The street noises resume and submerge tune a moment. Street noises and tune together crescendo. Tune finally rises above them triumphant.*]



# Come and Go

A dramaticule

for John Calder

Written in English early in 1965. First published in French by Editions de Minuit, Paris, in 1966. First published in English by Calder and Boyars, London, in 1967. First produced as *Kommen und Geben*, translated by Elmar Tophoven, at the Schiller-Theater Werkstatt, Berlin, on 14 January 1966. First performed in English at the Peacock Theatre, Dublin, on 28 February 1968 and subsequently at the Royal Festival Hall, London, on 9 December 1968.

## CHARACTERS:

FLO

VI

RU

(Ages undeterminable)



*Sitting centre side by side stage right to left FLO, VI and RU.  
Very erect, facing front, hands clasped in laps.  
Silence.*

VI: When did we three last meet?

RU: Let us not speak.

*[Silence.*

*Exit VI right.*

*Silence.]*

FLO: RU.

RU: Yes.

FLO: What do you think of Vi?

RU: I see little change. *[FLO moves to centre seat, whispers in RU's ear. Appalled.]* Oh! *[They look at each other. FLO puts her finger to her lips.]* Does she not realize?

FLO: God grant not.

*[Enter VI. FLO and RU turn back front, resume pose. VI sits right.*

*Silence.]*

Just sit together as we used to, in the playground at Miss Wade's.

RU: On the log.

*[Silence.*

*Exit FLO left.*

*Silence.]*

Vi.

VI: Yes.

RU: How do you find Flo?

VI: She seems much the same. *[RU moves to centre seat, whispers in VI's ear. Appalled.]* Oh! *[They look at each other. RU puts her finger to her lips.]* Has she not been told?

RU: God forbid.

[Enter FLO. RU and VI turn back front, resume pose. FLO sits left.]

Holding hands . . . that way.

FLO: Dreaming of . . . love.

[Silence.

Exit RU right.

Silence.]

VI: Flo.

FLO: Yes.

VI: How do you think Ru is looking?

FLO: One sees little in this light. [VI moves to centre seat, whispers in FLO's ear. Appalled.] Oh! [They look at each other. VI puts her finger to her lips.] Does she not know?

VI: Please God not.

[Enter RU. VI and FLO turn back front, resume pose. RU sits right.

Silence.]

May we not speak of the old days? [Silence.] Of what came after? [Silence.] Shall we hold hands in the old way?

[After a moment they join hands as follows: VI's right hand with RU's right hand. VI's left hand with FLO's left hand, FLO's right hand with RU's left hand, VI's arms being above RU's left arm and FLO's right arm. The three pairs of clasped hands rest on the three laps.

Silence.]

FLO: I can feel the rings.

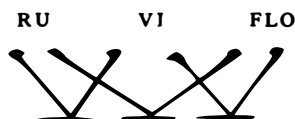
[Silence.]

CURTAIN

## NOTES

*Successive positions*

1		FLO	VI	RU
2	{	FLO		RU
			FLO	RU
3		VI	FLO	RU
4	{	VI		RU
		VI	RU	
5		VI	RU	FLO
6	{	VI		FLO
			VI	FLO
7		RU	VI	FLO

*Hands**Lighting*

Soft, from above only and concentrated on playing area.  
Rest of stage as dark as possible.

*Costume*

Full-length coats, buttoned high, dull violet (Ru), dull red (Vi), dull yellow (Flo). Drab nondescript hats with enough brim to shade faces. Apart from colour differentiation three figures as alike as possible. Light shoes with rubber soles. Hands made up to be as visible as possible. No rings apparent.

*Seat*

Narrow benchlike seat, without back, just long enough to accommodate three figures almost touching. As little visible as possible. It should not be clear what they are sitting on.

*Exits*

The figures are not seen to go off stage. They should disappear a few steps from lit area. If dark not sufficient to allow this, recourse should be had to screens or drapes as little visible as possible. Exits and entrances slow, without sound of feet.

*Oh's*

Three very different sounds.

*Voices*

As low as compatible with audibility. Colourless except for three 'oh's' and two lines following.



# **Eh Joe**

**A piece for television**

Written in English in April-May 1965. First televised on BBC2 on 4 July 1966. First published by Faber and Faber, London, in 1967.

Joe, late fifties, grey hair, old dressing-gown, carpet slippers, in his room.

1. Joe seen from behind sitting on edge of bed, intent pose, getting up, going to window, opening window, looking out, closing window, drawing curtain, standing intent.

2. Joe do. (=from behind) going from window to door, opening door, looking out, closing door, locking door, drawing hanging before door, standing intent.

3. Joe do. going from door to cupboard, opening cupboard, looking in, closing cupboard, locking cupboard, drawing hanging before cupboard, standing intent.

4. Joe do. going from cupboard to bed, kneeling down, looking under bed, getting up, sitting down on edge of bed as when discovered, beginning to relax.

5. Joe seen from front sitting on edge of bed, relaxed, eyes closed. Hold, then dolly slowly in to closeup of face. First word of text stops this movement.

### *Camera*

Joe's opening movements followed by camera at constant remove, Joe full length in frame throughout. No need to record room as whole. After this opening pursuit, between first and final closeup of face, camera has nine slight moves in towards face, say four inches each time. Each move is stopped by voice resuming, never camera move and voice together. This would give position of camera when dolly stopped by first word of text as one yard from maximum closeup of face. Camera does not move between paragraphs till clear that pause (say three seconds) longer than between phrases. Then four inches in say four seconds when movement stopped by voice resuming.

### *Voice*

Low, distinct, remote, little colour, absolutely steady rhythm,



slightly slower than normal. Between phrases a beat of one second at least. Between paragraphs about seven, i.e. three before camera starts to advance and four for advance before it is stopped by voice resuming.

### *Face*

Practically motionless throughout, eyes unblinking during paragraphs, impassive except in so far as it reflects mounting tension of *listening*. Brief zones of relaxation between paragraphs when perhaps voice has relented for the evening and intentness may relax variously till restored by voice resuming.

### WOMAN'S VOICE:

Joe . . .

[*Eyes open, resumption of intentness.*]

Joe . . .

[*Full intentness.*]

Thought of everything? . . . Forgotten nothing? . . . You're all right now, eh? . . . No one can see you now . . . No one can get at you now . . . Why don't you put out that light? . . . There might be a louse watching you . . . Why don't you go to bed? . . . What's wrong with that bed, Joe? . . . You changed it, didn't you? . . . Made no difference? . . . Or is the heart already? . . . Crumbles when you lie down in the dark . . . Dry rotten at last . . . Eh Joe?

### *Camera move 1*

The best's to come, you said, that last time . . . Hurrying me into my coat . . . Last I was favoured with from you . . . Say it you now, Joe, no one'll hear you . . . Come on, Joe, no one can say it like you, say it again now and listen to yourself . . . The best's to come . . . You were right for once . . . In the end.

### *Camera move 2*

You know that penny farthing hell you call your mind . . . That's where you think this is coming from, don't you? . . .

That's where you heard your father . . . Isn't that what you told me? . . . Started in on you one June night and went on for years . . . On and off . . . Behind the eyes . . . That's how you were able to throttle him in the end . . . Mental thuggee you called it . . . One of your happiest fancies . . . Mental thuggee . . . Otherwise he'd be plaguing you yet . . . Then your mother when her hour came . . . 'Look up, Joe, look up, we're watching you' . . . Weaker and weaker till you laid her too . . . Others . . . All the others . . . Such love he got . . . God knows why . . . Pitying love . . . None to touch it . . . And look at him now . . . Throttling the dead in his head.

*Camera move 3*

Anyone living love you now, Joe? . . . Anyone living sorry for you now? . . . That slut that comes on Saturday, you pay her, don't you? . . . Penny a hoist tuppence as long as you like . . . Watch yourself you don't run short, Joe . . . Ever think of that? . . . Eh Joe? . . . What it'd be if you ran out of us . . . Not another soul to still . . . Sit there in his stinking old wrapper hearing himself . . . That lifelong adorer . . . Weaker and weaker till not a gasp left there either . . . Is it that you want? . . . Well preserved for his age and the silence of the grave . . . That old paradise you were always harping on . . . No Joe . . . Not for the likes of us.

*Camera move 4*

I was strong myself when I started . . . In on you . . . Wasn't I, Joe? . . . Normal strength . . . Like those summer evenings in the Green . . . In the early days . . . Of our idyll . . . When we sat watching the ducks . . . Holding hands exchanging vows . . . How you admired my elocution! . . . Among other charms . . . Voice like flint glass . . . To borrow your expression . . . Powerful grasp of language you had . . . Flint glass . . . You could have listened to it for ever . . . And now this . . . Squeezed

down to this . . . . How much longer would you say? . . . Till the whisper . . . . You know . . . . When you can't hear the words . . . . Just the odd one here and there . . . . That's the worst . . . . Isn't it, Joe? . . . Isn't that what you told me . . . . Before we expire . . . . The odd word . . . . Straining to hear . . . . Why must you do that? . . . When you're nearly home . . . . What matter then . . . . What we mean . . . . It should be the best . . . . Nearly home again . . . . Another stilled . . . . And it's the worst . . . . Isn't that what you said? . . . The whisper . . . . The odd word . . . . Straining to hear . . . . Brain tired squeezing . . . . It stops in the end . . . . You stop it in the end . . . . Imagine if you couldn't . . . . Ever think of that? . . . If it went on . . . . The whisper in your head . . . . Me whispering at you in your head . . . . Things you can't catch . . . . On and off . . . . Till you join us . . . . Eh Joe?

*Camera move 5*

How's your Lord these days? . . . Still worth having? . . . Still lapping it up? . . . The passion of our Joe . . . . Wait till He starts talking to you . . . . When you're done with yourself . . . . All your dead dead . . . . Sitting there in your foul old wrapper . . . . Very fair health for a man of your years . . . . Just that lump in your bubo . . . . Silence of the grave without the maggots . . . . To crown your labours . . . . Till one night . . . . 'Thou fool thy soul' . . . . Put your thugs on that . . . . Eh Joe? . . . Ever think of that? . . . When He starts in on you . . . . When you're done with yourself . . . . If you ever are.

*Camera move 6*

Yes, great love God knows why . . . . Even me . . . . But I found a better . . . . As I hope you heard . . . . Preferable in all respects . . . . Kinder . . . . Stronger . . . . More intelligent . . . . Better looking . . . . Cleaner . . . . Truthful . . . . Faithful . . . . Sane . . . . Yes . . . . I did all right.

*Camera move 7*

But there was one didn't . . . . You know the one I mean, Joe . . . . The green one . . . . The narrow one . . . . Always pale . . . . The pale eyes . . . . Spirit made light . . . . To borrow your expression . . . . The way they opened after . . . . Unique . . . . Are you with me now? . . . Eh Joe? . . . There was love for you . . . . The best's to come, you said . . . . Bundling her into her Avoca sack . . . . Her fingers fumbling with the big horn buttons . . . . Ticket in your pocket for the first morning flight . . . . You've had her, haven't you? . . . You've laid her? . . . Of course he has . . . . She went young . . . . No more old lip from her.

*Camera move 8*

Ever know what happened? . . . She didn't say? . . . Just the announcement in the *Independent* . . . . 'On Mary's beads we plead her needs and in the Holy Mass' . . . . Will I tell you? . . . Not interested? . . . Well I will just the same . . . . I think you should know . . . . That's right, Joe, squeeze away . . . . Don't lose heart now . . . . When you're nearly home . . . . I'll soon be gone . . . . The last of them . . . . Unless that poor old slut loves you . . . . Then yourself . . . . That old bonfire . . . . Years of that stink . . . . Then the silence . . . . A dollop of that . . . . To crown all . . . . Till His Nibs . . . . One dirty winter night . . . . 'Mud thou art.'

*Camera move 9*

All right . . . . Warm summer night . . . . All sleeping . . . . Sitting on the edge of her bed in her lavender slip . . . . You know the one . . . . Ah she knew you, heavenly powers! . . . Faint lap of sea through open window . . . . Gets up in the end and slips out as she is . . . . Moon . . . . Stock . . . . Down the garden and under the viaduct . . . .

Sees from the seaweed the tide is flowing . . . . Goes on down to the edge and lies down with her face in the wash . . . . Cut a long story short doesn't work . . . . Gets up in the end sopping wet and back up to the house . . . . Gets out the Gillette . . . . The make you recommended for her body hair . . . . Back down the garden and under the viaduct . . . . Takes the blade from the holder and lies down at the edge on her side . . . . Cut another long story short doesn't work either . . . . You know how she always dreaded pain . . . . Tears a strip from the slip and ties it round the scratch . . . . Gets up in the end and back up to the house . . . . Slip clinging the way wet silk will . . . . This all new to you, Joe? . . . Eh Joe? . . . Gets the tablets and back down the garden and under the viaduct . . . . Takes a few on the way . . . . Unconscionable hour by now . . . . Moon going off the shore behind the hill . . . . Stands a bit looking at the beaten silver . . . . Then starts along the edge to a place further down near the Rock . . . . Imagine what in her mind to make her do that . . . . Imagine . . . . Trailing her feet in the water like a child . . . . Takes a few more on the way . . . . Will I go on, Joe? . . . Eh Joe? . . . Lies down in the end with her face a few feet from the tide . . . . Clawing at the shingle now . . . . Has it all worked out this time . . . . Finishes the tube . . . . There's love for you . . . . Eh Joe? . . . Scoops a little cup for her face in the stones . . . . The green one . . . . The narrow one . . . . Always pale . . . . The pale eyes . . . . The look they shed before . . . . The way they opened after . . . . Spirit made light . . . . Wasn't that your description, Joe? . . .

[*Voice drops to whisper, almost inaudible except words in italics.*]

All right . . . . You've had the best . . . . Now *imagine* . . . . Before she goes . . . . Face in the cup . . . . Lips on a *stone* . . . . Taking Joe with her . . . . Light gone . . . . '*Joe Joe*' . . . . No sound . . . . To the *stones* . . . . Say it you now, no one'll hear you . . . . Say '*Joe*' it parts the *lips* . . . . *Imagine* the hands . . . . The *solitaire* . . . . Against a *stone* . . . . *Imagine* the *eyes* . . . . Spiritlight . . . . Month of June . . . . What year of your Lord? . . . . *Breasts* in the stones . . . . And the *hands*

.... Before they go .... *Imagine* the hands .... What are they at? ... In the *stones* ....

[*Image fades, voice as before.*]

What are they fondling? ... Till they go .... *There's love for you* .... Isn't it, Joe? ... Wasn't it, Joe? ... *Eh Joe?* ... Wouldn't you say? ... Compared to us .... Compared to Him .... *Eh Joe?* ...

[*Voice and image out. End.*]



**Breath**



Written in English some time before it was sent to New York, in 1969, in response to Kenneth Tynan's request for a contribution to his review *Oh! Calcutta!* The original text first published in *Gambit*, vol. 4, no. 16 (1970). First produced at the Eden Theater, New York, on 16 June 1969. First performed in Britain at the Close Theatre Club, Glasgow, in October 1969.

## **CURTAIN**

1. Faint light on stage littered with miscellaneous rubbish. Hold about five seconds.
2. Faint brief cry and immediately inspiration and slow increase of light together reaching maximum together in about ten seconds. Silence and hold about five seconds.
3. Expiration and slow decrease of light together reaching minimum together (light as in 1) in about ten seconds and immediately cry as before. Silence and hold about five seconds.

## **CURTAIN**

### **RUBBISH**

No verticals, all scattered and lying.

### **CRY**

Instant of recorded vagitus. Important that two cries be identical, switching on and off strictly synchronized light and breath.

### **BREATH**

Amplified recording.

### **MAXIMUM LIGHT**

Not bright. If 0 = dark and 10 = bright, light should move from about 3 to 6 and back.



**Not I**

Written in English in spring 1972. First performed at the Forum Theater of the Lincoln Center, New York, in September 1972. First published by Faber and Faber, London, in 1973. First performed in Britain at the Royal Court Theatre, London, on 16 January 1973.

*Note*

**Movement:** this consists in simple sideways raising of arms from sides and their falling back, in a gesture of helpless compassion. It lessens with each recurrence till scarcely perceptible at third. There is just enough pause to contain it as MOUTH recovers from vehement refusal to relinquish third person.

*Stage in darkness but for MOUTH, upstage audience right, about 8 feet above stage level, faintly lit from close-up and below, rest of face in shadow. Invisible microphone.*

*AUDITOR, downstage audience left, tall standing figure, sex undeterminable, enveloped from head to foot in loose black djellaba, with hood, fully faintly lit, standing on invisible podium about 4 feet high shown by attitude alone to be facing diagonally across stage intent on MOUTH, dead still throughout but for four brief movements where indicated. See Note.*

*As house lights down MOUTH's voice unintelligible behind curtain. House lights out. Voice continues unintelligible behind curtain, 10 seconds. With rise of curtain ad-libbing from text as required leading when curtain fully up and attention sufficient into:*

**MOUTH:** . . . out . . . into this world . . . this world . . . tiny little thing . . . before its time . . . in a godfor— . . . what? . . . girl? . . . yes . . . tiny little girl . . . into this . . . out into this . . . before her time . . . godforsaken hole called . . . called . . . no matter . . . parents unknown . . . unheard of . . . he having vanished . . . thin air . . . no sooner buttoned up his breeches . . . she similarly . . . eight months later . . . almost to the tick . . . so no love . . . spared that . . . no love such as normally vented on the . . . speechless infant . . . in the home . . . no . . . nor indeed for that matter any of any kind . . . no love of any kind . . . at any subsequent stage . . . so typical affair . . . nothing of any note till coming up to sixty when— . . . what? . . . seventy? . . . good God! . . . coming up to seventy . . . wandering in a field . . . looking aimlessly for cowslips . . . to make a ball . . . a few steps then stop . . . stare into space . . . then on . . . a few more . . . stop and stare again . . . so on . . . drifting around . . . when suddenly . . . gradually . . . all went out . . . all that early April morn-

ing light... and she found herself in the—... what?... who?... no!... she!... [*Pause and movement 1.*] ... found herself in the dark... and if not exactly... insentient... insentient... for she could still hear the buzzing... so-called... in the ears... and a ray of light came and went... came and went... such as the moon might cast... drifting... in and out of cloud... but so dulled... feeling... feeling so dulled... she did not know... what position she was in... imagine!... what position she was in!... whether standing... or sitting... but the brain—... what?... kneeling?... yes... whether standing... or sitting... or kneeling... but the brain—... what?... lying?... yes... whether standing... or sitting... or kneeling... or lying... but the brain still... still... in a way... for her first thought was... oh long after... sudden flash... brought up as she had been to believe... with the other waifs... in a merciful... [*Brief laugh.*] ... God... [*Good laugh.*] ... first thought was... oh long after... sudden flash... she was being punished... for her sins... a number of which then... further proof if proof were needed... flashed through her mind... one after another... then dismissed as foolish... oh long after... this thought dismissed... as she suddenly realized... gradually realized... she was not suffering... imagine!... not suffering!... indeed could not remember... off-hand... when she had suffered less... unless of course she was... *meant* to be suffering... ha!... *thought* to be suffering... just as the odd time... in her life... when clearly intended to be having pleasure... she was in fact... having none... not the slightest... in which case of course... that notion of punishment... for some sin or other... or for the lot... or no particular reason... for its own sake... thing she understood perfectly... that notion of punishment... which had first occurred to her... brought up as she had been to believe... with the other waifs... in a merciful... [*Brief laugh.*] ... God... [*Good laugh.*] ... first occurred to her... then dismissed... as foolish... was perhaps not so foolish... after all... so on... all that... vain reasonings... till another thought... oh long after... sudden flash... very



foolish really but—... what?... the buzzing?... yes... all the time the buzzing... so-called... in the ears... though of course actually... not in the ears at all... in the skull... dull roar in the skull... and all the time this ray or beam... like moonbeam... but probably not... certainly not... always the same spot... now bright... now shrouded... but always the same spot... as no moon could... no... no moon... just all part of the same wish to... torment... though actually in point of fact... not in the least... not a twinge... so far... ha!... so far... this other thought then... oh long after... sudden flash... very foolish really but so like her... in a way... that she might do well to... groan... on and off... writhe she could not... as if in actual agony... but could not... could not bring herself... some flaw in her make-up... incapable of deceit... or the machine... more likely the machine... so disconnected... never got the message... or powerless to respond... like numbed... couldn't make the sound... not any sound... no sound of any kind... no screaming for help for example... should she feel so inclined... scream... [*Screams.*]... then listen... [*Silence.*]... scream again... [*Screams again.*]... then listen again... [*Silence.*]... no... spared that... all silent as the grave... no part—... what?... the buzzing?... yes... all silent but for the buzzing... so-called... no part of her moving... that she could feel... just the eyelids... presumably... on and off... shut out the light... reflex they call it... no feeling of any kind... but the lids... even best of times... who feels them?... opening... shutting... all that moisture... but the brain still... still sufficiently... oh very much so!... at this stage... in control... under control... to question even this... for on that April morning... so it reasoned... that April morning... she fixing with her eye... a distant bell... as she hastened towards it... fixing it with her eye... lest it elude her... had not all gone out... all that light... of itself... without any... any... on her part... so on... so on it reasoned... vain questionings... and all dead still... sweet silent as the grave... when suddenly... gradually... she realiz—... what?... the

buzzing?... yes ... all dead still but for the buzzing ...  
when suddenly she realized ... words were— ... what?...  
who?... no! ... she! ... [*Pause and movement 2.*] ... realized  
... words were coming ... imagine! ... words were coming  
... a voice she did not recognize ... at first ... so long since  
it had sounded ... then finally had to admit ... could be  
none other ... than her own ... certain vowel sounds ...  
she had never heard ... elsewhere ... so that people would  
stare ... the rare occasions ... once or twice a year ...  
always winter some strange reason ... stare at her uncom-  
prehending ... and now this stream ... steady stream ...  
she who had never ... on the contrary ... practically  
speechless ... all her days ... how she survived! ... even  
shopping ... out shopping ... busy shopping centre ...  
supermart ... just hand in the list ... with the bag ... old  
black shopping bag ... then stand there waiting ... any  
length of time ... middle of the throng ... motionless ...  
staring into space ... mouth half open as usual ... till it  
was back in her hand ... the bag back in her hand ... then  
pay and go ... not as much as good-bye ... how she  
survived! ... and now this stream ... not catching the half  
of it ... not the quarter ... no idea ... what she was saying  
... imagine! ... no idea what she was saying! ... till she began  
trying to ... delude herself ... it was not hers at all ... not  
her voice at all ... and no doubt would have ... vital she  
should ... was on the point ... after long efforts ... when  
suddenly she felt ... gradually she felt ... her lips moving  
... imagine! ... her lips moving! ... as of course till then she  
had not ... and not alone the lips ... the cheeks ... the  
jaws ... the whole face ... all those— ... what?... the  
tongue?... yes ... the tongue in the mouth ... all those  
contortions without which ... no speech possible ... and  
yet in the ordinary way ... not felt at all ... so intent one  
is ... on what one is saying ... the whole being ... hanging  
on its words ... so that not only she had ... had she ...  
not only had she ... to give up ... admit hers alone ... her  
voice alone ... but this other awful thought ... oh long  
after ... sudden flash ... even more awful if possible ...  
that feeling was coming back ... imagine! ... feeling coming

back! . . . starting at the top . . . then working down . . . the whole machine . . . but no . . . spared that . . . the mouth alone . . . so far . . . ha! . . . so far . . . then thinking . . . oh long after . . . sudden flash . . . it can't go on . . . all this . . . all that . . . steady stream . . . straining to hear . . . make something of it . . . and her own thoughts . . . make something of them . . . all— . . . what? . . . the buzzing? . . . yes . . . all the time the buzzing . . . so-called . . . all that together . . . imagine! . . . whole body like gone . . . just the mouth . . . lips . . . cheeks . . . jaws . . . never— . . . what? . . . tongue? . . . yes . . . lips . . . cheeks . . . jaws . . . tongue . . . never still a second . . . mouth on fire . . . stream of words . . . in her ear . . . practically in her ear . . . not catching the half . . . not the quarter . . . no idea what she's saying . . . imagine! . . . no idea what she's saying! . . . and can't stop . . . no stopping it . . . she who but a moment before . . . but a moment! . . . could not make a sound . . . no sound of any kind . . . now can't stop . . . imagine! . . . can't stop the stream . . . and the whole brain begging . . . something begging in the brain . . . begging the mouth to stop . . . pause a moment . . . if only for a moment . . . and no response . . . as if it hadn't heard . . . or couldn't . . . couldn't pause a second . . . like maddened . . . all that together . . . straining to hear . . . piece it together . . . and the brain . . . raving away on its own . . . trying to make sense of it . . . or make it stop . . . or in the past . . . dragging up the past . . . flashes from all over . . . walks mostly . . . walking all her days . . . day after day . . . a few steps then stop . . . stare into space . . . then on . . . a few more . . . stop and stare again . . . so on . . . drifting around . . . day after day . . . or that time she cried . . . the one time she could remember . . . since she was a baby . . . must have cried as a baby . . . perhaps not . . . not essential to life . . . just the birth cry to get her going . . . breathing . . . then no more till this . . . old hag already . . . sitting staring at her hand . . . where was it? . . . Croker's Acres . . . one evening on the way home . . . home! . . . a little mound in Croker's Acres . . . dusk . . . sitting staring at her hand . . . there in her lap . . . palm upward . . . suddenly saw it wet . . . the palm . . . tears presumably . . . hers presumably . . . no one else for miles . . .

no sound . . . just the tears . . . sat and watched them dry . . .  
all over in a second . . . or grabbing at straw . . . the brain . . .  
flickering away on its own . . . quick grab and on . . . nothing  
there . . . on to the next . . . bad as the voice . . . worse . . .  
as little sense . . . all that together . . . can't— . . . what? . . .  
the buzzing? . . . yes . . . all the time the buzzing . . . dull  
roar like falls . . . and the beam . . . flickering on and off . . .  
starting to move around . . . like moonbeam but not . . .  
all part of the same . . . keep an eye on that too . . . corner  
of the eye . . . all that together . . . can't go on . . . God is  
love . . . she'll be purged . . . back in the field . . . morning  
sun . . . April . . . sink face down in the grass . . . nothing  
but the larks . . . so on . . . grabbing at the straw . . . straining  
to hear . . . the odd word . . . make some sense of it . . .  
whole body like gone . . . just the mouth . . . like maddened  
. . . and can't stop . . . no stopping it . . . something she— . . .  
something she had to— . . . what? . . . who? . . . no! . . . she! . . .  
[Pause and movement 3.] . . . something she had to— . . .  
what? . . . the buzzing? . . . yes . . . all the time the buzzing . . .  
dull roar . . . in the skull . . . and the beam . . . ferreting  
around . . . painless . . . so far . . . ha! . . . so far . . . then  
thinking . . . oh long after . . . sudden flash . . . perhaps  
something she had to . . . had to . . . tell . . . could that be  
it? . . . something she had to . . . tell . . . tiny little thing . . .  
before its time . . . godforsaken hole . . . no love . . . spared  
that . . . speechless all her days . . . practically speechless . . .  
how she survived! . . . that time in court . . . what had she  
to say for herself . . . guilty or not guilty . . . stand up  
woman . . . speak up woman . . . stood there staring into  
space . . . mouth half open as usual . . . waiting to be led  
away . . . glad of the hand on her arm . . . now this . . . some-  
thing she had to tell . . . could that be it? . . . something that  
would tell . . . how it was . . . how she— . . . what? . . . had  
been? . . . yes . . . something that would tell how it had been  
. . . how she had lived . . . lived on and on . . . guilty or not  
. . . on and on . . . to be sixty . . . something she— . . . what? . . .  
seventy? . . . good God! . . . on and on to be seventy . . . some-  
thing she didn't know herself . . . wouldn't know if she  
heard . . . then forgiven . . . God is love . . . tender mercies

... new every morning ... back in the field ... April morning ... face in the grass ... nothing but the larks ... pick it up there ... get on with it from there ... another few— ... what? .. not that? .. nothing to do with that? .. nothing she could tell? .. all right ... nothing she could tell ... try something else ... think of something else ... oh long after ... sudden flash ... not that either ... all right ... something else again ... so on ... hit on it in the end ... think everything keep on long enough ... then forgiven ... back in the— ... what? .. not that either? .. nothing to do with that either? .. nothing she could think? .. all right ... nothing she could tell ... nothing she could think ... nothing she— ... what? .. who? .. no! .. she! .. [*Pause and movement 4.*] ... tiny little thing ... out before its time ... godforsaken hole ... no love ... spared that ... speechless all her days ... practically speechless ... even to herself ... never out loud ... but not completely ... sometimes sudden urge ... once or twice a year ... always winter some strange reason ... the long evenings ... hours of darkness ... sudden urge to ... tell ... then rush out stop the first she saw ... nearest lavatory ... start pouring it out ... steady stream ... mad stuff ... half the vowels wrong ... no one could follow ... till she saw the stare she was getting ... then die of shame ... crawl back in ... once or twice a year ... always winter some strange reason ... long hours of darkness ... now this ... this ... quicker and quicker ... the words ... the brain ... flickering away like mad ... quick grab and on ... nothing there ... on somewhere else ... try somewhere else ... all the time something begging ... something in her begging ... begging it all to stop ... unanswered ... prayer unanswered ... or unheard ... too faint ... so on ... keep on ... trying ... not knowing what ... what she was trying ... what to try ... whole body like gone ... just the mouth ... like maddened ... so on ... keep— ... what? .. the buzzing? .. yes ... all the time the buzzing ... dull roar like falls ... in the skull ... and the beam ... poking around ... painless ... so far ... ha! ... so far ... all that ... keep on ... not knowing what ... what she was— ... what? .. who? .. no! .. she! .. SHE! .. [*Pause.*]

... what she was trying ... what to try ... no matter ...  
keep on ... [*Curtain starts down.*] ... hit on it in the end  
... then back ... God is love ... tender mercies ... new  
every morning ... back in the field ... April morning ...  
face in the grass ... nothing but the larks ... pick it up—

[*Curtain fully down. House dark. Voice continues behind  
curtain, unintelligible, 10 seconds, ceases as house lights  
up.*]



**That Time**



Written in English between June 1974 and August 1975. First published by Grove Press, New York, in 1976. First performed at the Royal Court Theatre, London, on 20 May 1976.

### *Note*

Moments of one and the same voice A B C relay one another without solution of continuity—apart from the two 10-second breaks. Yet the switch from one to another must be clearly faintly perceptible. If threefold source and context prove insufficient to produce this effect it should be assisted mechanically (e.g. threefold pitch).

*Curtain. Stage in darkness. Fade up to LISTENER'S FACE about 10 feet above stage level midstage off centre.*

*Old white face, long flaring white hair as if seen from above outspread.*

*Voices A B C are his own coming to him from both sides and above. They modulate back and forth without any break in general flow except where silence indicated. See note.*

*Silence 7 seconds. LISTENER'S EYES are open. His breath audible, slow and regular.*

A: that time you went back that last time to look was the ruin still there where you hid as a child when was that [*Eyes close.*] grey day took the eleven to the end of the line and on from there no no trams then all gone long ago that time you went back to look was the ruin still there where you hid as a child that last time not a tram left in the place only the old rails when was that

C: when you went in out of the rain always winter then always raining that time in the Portrait Gallery in off the street out of the cold and rain slipped in when no one was looking and through the rooms shivering and dripping till you found a seat marble slab and sat down to rest and dry off and on to hell out of there when was that

B: on the stone together in the sun on the stone at the edge of the little wood and as far as eye could see the wheat turning yellow vowing every now and then you loved each other just a murmur not touching or anything of that nature you one end of the stone she the other long low stone like millstone no looks just there on the stone in the sun with the little wood behind gazing at the wheat or eyes closed all still no sign of life not a soul abroad no sound

A: straight off the ferry and up with the nightbag to the high

street neither right nor left not a curse for the old scenes  
the old names straight up the rise from the wharf to the  
high street and there not a wire to be seen only the old  
rails all rust when was that was your mother ah for God's  
sake all gone long ago that time you went back that last  
time to look was the ruin still there where you hid as a  
child someone's folly

c: was your mother ah for God's sake all gone long ago all dust  
the lot you the last huddled up on the slab in the old  
green greatcoat with your arms round you whose else  
hugging you for a bit of warmth to dry off and on to hell  
out of there and on to the next not a living soul in the  
place only yourself and the odd attendant drowsing  
around in his felt shufflers not a sound to be heard only  
every now and then a shuffle of felt drawing near then  
dying away

B: all still just the leaves and ears and you too still on the stone  
in a daze no sound not a word only every now and then to  
vow you loved each other just a murmur one thing could  
ever bring tears till they dried up altogether that thought  
when it came up among the others floated up that scene

A: Foley was it Foley's Folly bit of a tower still standing all the  
rest rubble and nettles where did you sleep no friend all  
the homes gone was it that kip on the front where you no  
she was with you then still with you then just the one  
night in any case off the ferry one morning and back on  
her the next to look was the ruin still there where none  
ever came where you hid as a child slip off when no one  
was looking and hide there all day long on a stone among  
the nettles with your picture-book

c: till you hoisted your head and there before your eyes when  
they opened a vast oil black with age and dirt someone  
famous in his time some famous man or woman or even  
child such as a young prince or princess some young prince  
or princess of the blood black with age behind the glass  
where gradually as you peered trying to make it out  
gradually of all things a face appeared had you swivel on  
the slab to see who it was there at your elbow

B: on the stone in the sun gazing at the wheat or the sky or the

eyes closed nothing to be seen but the wheat turning yellow and the blue sky vowing every now and then you loved each other just a murmur tears without fail till they dried up altogether suddenly there in whatever thoughts you might be having whatever scenes perhaps way back in childhood or the womb worst of all or that old Chinaman long before Christ born with long white hair

c: never the same after that never quite the same but that was nothing new if it wasn't this it was that common occurrence something you could never be the same after crawling about year after year sunk in your lifelong mess muttering to yourself who else you'll never be the same after this you were never the same after that

A: or talking to yourself who else out loud imaginary conversations there was childhood for you ten or eleven on a stone among the giant nettles making it up now one voice now another till you were hoarse and they all sounded the same well on into the night some moods in the black dark or moonlight and they all out on the roads looking for you

B: or by the window in the dark harking to the owl not a thought in your head till hard to believe harder and harder to believe you ever told anyone you loved them or anyone you till just one of those things you kept making up to keep the void out just another of those old tales to keep the void from pouring in on top of you the shroud  
[*Silence 10 seconds. Breath audible. After 3 seconds eyes open.*]

c: never the same but the same as what for God's sake did you ever say I to yourself in your life come on now [*Eyes close.*] could you ever say I to yourself in your life turning-point that was a great word with you before they dried up altogether always having turning-points and never but the one the first and last that time curled up worm in slime when they lugged you out and wiped you off and straightened you up never another after that never looked back after that was that the time or was that another time

B: muttering that time altogether on the stone in the sun or that time together on the towpath or that time together in the sand that time that time making it up from there as best

you could always together somewhere in the sun on the towpath facing downstream into the sun sinking and the bits of flotsam coming from behind and drifting on or caught in the reeds the dead rat it looked like came on you from behind and went drifting on till you could see it no more

A: that time you went back to look was the ruin still there where you hid as a child that last time straight off the ferry and up the rise to the high street to catch the eleven neither right nor left only one thought in your head not a curse for the old scenes the old names just head down press on up the rise to the top and there stood waiting with the nightbag till the truth began to dawn

C: when you started not knowing who you were from Adam trying how that would work for a change not knowing who you were from Adam no notion who it was saying what you were saying whose skull you were clapped up in whose moan had you the way you were was that the time or was that another time there alone with the portraits of the dead black with dirt and antiquity and the dates on the frames in case you might get the century wrong not believing it could be you till they put you out in the rain at closing-time

B: no sight of the face or any other part never turned to her nor she to you always parallel like on an axle-tree never turned to each other just blurs on the fringes of the field no touching or anything of that nature always space between if only an inch no pawing in the manner of flesh and blood no better than shades no worse if it wasn't for the vows

A: no getting out to it that way so what next no question of asking not another word to the living as long as you lived so foot it up in the end to the station bowed half double get out to it that way all closed down and boarded up Doric terminus of the Great Southern and Eastern all closed down and the colonnade crumbling away so what next

C: the rain and the old rounds trying making it up that way as you went along how it would work that way for a change never having been how never having been would work the old rounds trying to wangle you into it tottering and

muttering all over the parish till the words dried up and the head dried up and the legs dried up whoever they were or it gave up whoever it was

B: stock still always stock still like that time on the stone or that time in the sand stretched out parallel in the sand in the sun gazing up at the blue or eyes closed blue dark blue dark stock still side by side scene float up and there you were wherever it was

A: gave it up gave up and sat down on the steps in the pale morning sun no those steps got no sun somewhere else then gave up and off somewhere else and down on a step in the pale sun a doorstep say someone's doorstep for it to be time to get on the night ferry and out to hell out of there no need sleep anywhere not a curse for the old scenes the old names the passers pausing to gape at you quick gape then pass pass on pass by on the other side

B: stock still side by side in the sun then sink and vanish without your having stirred any more than the two knobs on a dumbbell except the lids and every now and then the lips to vow and all around all still all sides wherever it might be no stir or sound only faintly the leaves in the little wood behind or the ears or the bent or the reeds as the case might be of man no sight of man or beast no sight or sound

C: always winter then always raining always slipping in somewhere when no one would be looking in off the street out of the cold and rain in the old green holeproof coat your father left you places you hadn't to pay to get in like the Public Library that was another great thing free culture far from home or the Post Office that was another another place another time

A: huddled on the doorstep in the old green greatcoat in the pale sun with the nightbag needless on your knees not knowing where you were little by little not knowing where you were or when you were or what for place might have been uninhabited for all you knew like that time on the stone the child on the stone where none ever came  
[Silence 10 seconds. Breath audible. After 3 seconds eyes open.]

- B: or alone in the same the same scenes making it up that way to keep it going keep it out on the stone [*Eyes close.*]  
alone on the end of the stone with the wheat and blue or the towpath alone on the towpath with the ghosts of the mules the drowned rat or bird or whatever it was floating off into the sunset till you could see it no more nothing stirring only the water and the sun going down till it went down and you vanished all vanished
- A: none ever came but the child on the stone among the giant nettles with the light coming in where the wall had crumbled away poring on his book well on into the night some moods the moonlight and they all out on the roads looking for him or making up talk breaking up two or more talking to himself being together that way where none ever came
- C: always winter then endless winter year after year as if it couldn't end the old year never end like time could go no further that time in the Post Office all bustle Christmas bustle in off the street when no one was looking out of the cold and rain pushed open the door like anyone else and straight for the table neither right nor left with all the forms and the pens on their chains sat down first vacant seat and were taking a look round for a change before drowsing away
- B: or that time alone on your back in the sand and no vows to break the peace when was that an earlier time a later time before she came after she went or both before she came after she was gone and you back in the old scene wherever it might be might have been the same old scene before as then then as after with the rat or the wheat the yellowing ears or that time in the sand the glider passing over that time you went back soon after long after
- A: eleven or twelve in the ruin on the flat stone among the nettles in the dark or moonlight muttering away now one voice now another there was childhood for you till there on the step in the pale sun you heard yourself at it again not a curse for the passers pausing to gape at the scandal huddled there in the sun where it had no warrant clutching the nightbag drooling away out loud eyes closed and the



white hair pouring out down from under the hat and so sat on in that pale sun forgetting it all

C: perhaps fear of ejection having clearly no warrant in the place to say nothing of the loathsome appearance so this look round for once at your fellow bastards thanking God for once bad and all as you were you were not as they till it dawned that for all the loathing you were getting you might as well not have been there at all the eyes passing over you and through you like so much thin air was that the time or was that another time another place another time

B: the glider passing over never any change same blue skies nothing ever changed but she with you there or not on your right hand always the right hand on the fringe of the field and every now and then in the great peace like a whisper so faint she loved you hard to believe you even you made up that bit till the time came in the end

A: making it all up on the doorstep as you went along making yourself all up again for the millionth time forgetting it all where you were and what for Foley's Folly and the lot the child's ruin you came to look was it still there to hide in again till it was night and time to go till that time came

C: the Library that was another place another time that time you slipped in off the street out of the cold and rain when no one was looking what was it then you were never the same after never again after something to do with dust something the dust said sitting at the big round table with a bevy of old ones poring on the page and not a sound

B: that time in the end when you tried and couldn't by the window in the dark and the owl flown to hoot at someone else or back with a shrew to its hollow tree and not another sound hour after hour hour after hour not a sound when you tried and tried and couldn't any more no words left to keep it out so gave it up gave up there by the window in the dark or moonlight gave up for good and let it in and nothing the worse a great shroud billowing in all over you on top of you and little or nothing the worse little or nothing

A: back down to the wharf with the nightbag and the old green

greatcoat your father left you trailing the ground and the white hair pouring out down from under the hat till that time came on down neither right nor left not a curse for the old scenes the old names not a thought in your head only get back on board and away to hell out of it and never come back or was that another time all that another time was there ever any other time but that time away to hell out of it all and never come back

c: not a sound only the old breath and the leaves turning and then suddenly this dust whole place suddenly full of dust when you opened your eyes from floor to ceiling nothing only dust and not a sound only what was it it said come and gone was that it something like that come and gone come and gone no one come and gone in no time gone in no time

*[Silence 10 seconds. Breath audible. After 3 seconds eyes open. After 5 seconds smile, toothless for preference. Hold 5 seconds till fade out and curtain.]*



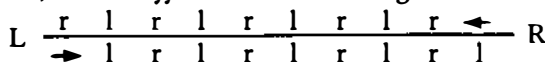
# Footfalls

Written in English. Begun in March 1975 and substantially completed by November of that year. First published by Grove Press, New York, in 1976. First performed at the Royal Court Theatre, London, on 20 May 1976.

MAY (M), *dishevelled grey hair, worn grey wrap hiding feet, trailing.*

WOMAN'S VOICE (V) *from dark upstage.*

Strip: *downstage, parallel with front, length nine steps, width one metre, a little off centre audience right.*



Pacing: *starting with right foot (r), from right (R) to left (L), with left foot (l) from L to R.*

Turn: *rightabout at L, leftabout at R.*

Steps: *clearly audible rhythmic tread.*

Lighting: *dim, strongest at floor level, less on body, least on head.*

Voices: *both low and slow throughout.*

Curtain. Stage in darkness.

Faint single chime. Pause as echoes die.

Fade up to dim on strip. Rest in darkness.

M discovered pacing towards L. Turns at L. paces three more lengths, halts, facing front at R.

Pause.

M: Mother. [Pause. No louder.] Mother.

[Pause.]

V: Yes, May.

M: Were you asleep?

V: Deep asleep. [Pause.] I heard you in my deep sleep. [Pause.]

There is no sleep so deep I would not hear you there.

[Pause. M resumes pacing. Four lengths. After first length, synchronous with steps.] One two three four five six seven wheel one two three four five six seven wheel. [Free.] Will you not try to snatch a little sleep?

[M halts facing front at R. Pause.]

m: Would you like me to inject you again?

v: Yes, but it is too soon.

[Pause.]

m: Would you like me to change your position again?

v: Yes, but it is too soon.

[Pause.]

m: Straighten your pillows? [Pause.] Change your drawsheet?

[Pause.] Pass you the bedpan? [Pause.] The warming-pan?

[Pause.] Dress your sores? [Pause.] Sponge you down?

[Pause.] Moisten your poor lips? [Pause.] Pray with you?

[Pause.] For you? [Pause.] Again.

[Pause.]

v: Yes, but it is too soon.

[Pause.]

m: What age am I now?

v: And I? [Pause. No louder.] And I?

m: Ninety.

v: So much?

m: Eighty-nine, ninety.

v: I had you late. [Pause.] In life. [Pause.] Forgive me again.

[Pause. No louder.] Forgive me again.

[m resumes pacing. After one length halts facing front at L.

Pause.]

m: What age am I now?

v: In your forties.

m: So little?

v: I'm afraid so. [Pause. m resumes pacing. After first turn at L.]

May. [Pause. No louder.] May.

m: [Pacing.] Yes, Mother.

v: Will you never have done? [Pause.] Will you never have done

... revolving it all?

m: [Halting.] It?

v: It all. [Pause.] In your poor mind. [Pause.] It all. [Pause.]

It all.

[m resumes pacing. Five seconds. Fade out on strip.

All in darkness. Steps cease.

Pause.

Chime a little fainter. Pause for echoes.

Fade up to a little less on strip. Rest in darkness.

*M discovered facing front at R.*

*Pause.]*

v: I walk here now. *[Pause.]* Rather I come and stand. *[Pause.]* At nightfall. *[Pause.]* She fancies she is alone. *[Pause.]* See how still she stands, how stark, with her face to the wall. *[Pause.]* How outwardly unmoved. *[Pause.]* She has not been out since girlhood. *[Pause.]* Not out since girlhood. *[Pause.]* Where is she, it may be asked. *[Pause.]* Why, in the old home, the same where she— *[Pause.]* The same where she began. *[Pause.]* Where it began. *[Pause.]* It all began. *[Pause.]* But this, this, when did this begin? *[Pause.]* When other girls of her age were out at . . . lacrosse she was already here. *[Pause.]* At this. *[Pause.]* The floor here, now bare, once was— *[M begins pacing. Steps a little slower.]* But let us watch her move, in silence. *[M paces. Towards end of second length.]* Watch how feat she wheels. *[M turns, paces. Synchronous with steps third length.]* Seven, eight, nine, wheel. *[M turns at L, paces one more length, halts facing front at R.]* I say the floor here, now bare, this strip of floor, once was carpeted, a deep pile. Till one night, while still little more than a child, she called her mother and said, Mother, this is not enough. The mother: Not enough? May—the child's given name—May: Not enough. The mother: What do you mean, May, not enough, what can you possibly mean, May, not enough? May: I mean, Mother, that I must hear the feet, however faint they fall. The mother: The motion alone is not enough? May: No, Mother, the motion alone is not enough, I must hear the feet, however faint they fall. *[Pause. M resumes pacing. With pacing.]* Does she still sleep, it may be asked? Yes, some nights she does, in snatches, bows her poor head against the wall and snatches a little sleep. *[Pause.]* Still speak? Yes, some nights she does, when she fancies none can hear. *[Pause.]* Tells how it was. *[Pause.]* Tries to tell how it was. *[Pause.]* It all. *[Pause.]* It all. *[M continues pacing. Five seconds. Fade out on strip.]*

*All in darkness, Steps cease.*

*Pause.*



*Chime a little fainter still. Pause for echoes.*

*Fade up to a little less still on strip. Rest in darkness.*

*M discovered facing front at R.*

*Pause.]*

**M:** Sequel. [*Pause. Begins pacing. Steps a little slower still. After two lengths halts facing front at R. Pause.*] Sequel. A little later, when she was quite forgotten, she began to— [*Pause.*] A little later, when as though she had never been, it never been, she began to walk. [*Pause.*] At nightfall. [*Pause.*] Slip out at nightfall and into the little church by the north door, always locked at that hour, and walk, up and down, up and down, his poor arm. [*Pause.*] Some nights she would halt, as one frozen by some shudder of the mind, and stand stark still till she could move again. But many also were the nights when she paced without pause, up and down, up and down, before vanishing the way she came. [*Pause.*] No sound. [*Pause.*] None at least to be heard. [*Pause.*] The semblance. [*Pause. Resumes pacing. After two lengths halts facing front at R. Pause.*] The semblance. Faint, though by no means invisible, in a certain light. [*Pause.*] Given the right light. [*Pause.*] Grey rather than white, a pale shade of grey. [*Pause.*] Tattered. [*Pause.*] A tangle of tatters. [*Pause.*] Watch it pass—[*Pause.*]—watch her pass before the candelabrum, how its flames, their light . . . like moon through passing rack. [*Pause.*] Soon then after she was gone, as though never there, began to walk, up and down, up and down, that poor arm. [*Pause.*] At nightfall. [*Pause.*] That is to say, at certain seasons of the year, during Vespers. [*Pause.*] Necessarily. [*Pause. Resumes pacing. After one length halts facing front at L. Pause.*] Old Mrs Winter, whom the reader will remember, old Mrs Winter, one late autumn Sunday evening, on sitting down to supper with her daughter after worship, after a few half-hearted mouthfuls laid down her knife and fork and bowed her head. What is it, Mother, said the daughter, a most strange girl, though scarcely a girl any more . . . [*Brokenly.*] . . . dreadfully un— . . . [*Pause. Normal voice.*] What is it, Mother, are you not feeling yourself? [*Pause.*] Mrs W. did not at once reply. But finally, raising her head

and fixing Amy—the daughter's given name, as the reader will remember—raising her head and fixing Amy full in the eye she said—[*Pause.*]—she murmured, fixing Amy full in the eye she murmured, Amy did you observe anything . . . strange at Evensong? Amy: No, Mother, I did not. Mrs W: Perhaps it was just my fancy. Amy: Just what exactly, Mother, did you perhaps fancy it was? [*Pause.*] Just what exactly, Mother, did you perhaps fancy this . . . strange thing was you observed? [*Pause.*] Mrs W: You yourself observed nothing . . . strange? Amy: No, Mother, I myself did not, to put it mildly. Mrs W: What do you mean, Amy, to put it mildly, what can you possibly mean, Amy, to put it mildly? Amy: I mean, Mother, that to say I observed nothing . . . strange is indeed to put it mildly. For I observed nothing of any kind, strange or otherwise. I saw nothing, heard nothing, of any kind. I was not there. Mrs W: Not there? Amy: Not there. Mrs W: But I heard you respond. [*Pause.*] I heard you say Amen. [*Pause.*] How could you have responded if you were not there? [*Pause.*] How could you possibly have said Amen if, as you claim, you were not there? [*Pause.*] The love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Ghost, be with us all, now, and for evermore. Amen. [*Pause.*] I heard you distinctly. [*Pause. Resumes pacing. After three steps halts without facing front. Long pause. Resumes pacing, halts facing front at R. Long pause.*] Amy. [*Pause. No louder.*] Amy. [*Pause.*] Yes, Mother. [*Pause.*] Will you never have done? [*Pause.*] Will you never have done . . . revolving it all? [*Pause.*] It? [*Pause.*] It all. [*Pause.*] In your poor mind. [*Pause.*] It all. [*Pause.*] It all. [*Pause. Fade out on strip. All in darkness.*]

*Pause.*

*Chime even a little fainter still. Pause for echoes.*

*Fade up to even a little less still on strip.*

*No trace of MAY.*

*Hold ten seconds.*

*Fade out.]*



# Ghost Trio

A play for television

**Written in English in 1975. First published by Grove Press, New York, in 1976. First televised on BBC2 on 17 April 1977.**

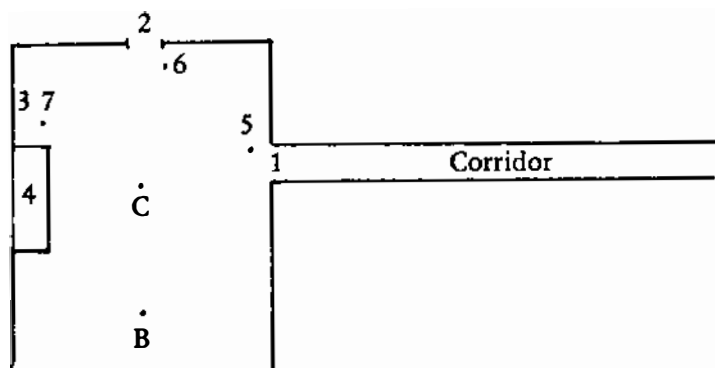
FEMALE VOICE (V)

MALE FIGURE (F)

I Pre-action

II Action

III Re-action



A

Room: 6m. x 5m.

1 Door.

2 Window.

3 Mirror.

4 Pallet.

5 F seated by door.

6 F at window.

7 F at head of pallet.

A Position general view.

B Position medium shot.

C Position near shot of 5 and 1, 6 and 2, 7 and 3.

# I

1. *Fade up to general view from A. 10 seconds.*
2. v: Good evening. Mine is a faint voice. Kindly tune accordingly. [Pause.] Good evening. Mine is a faint voice. Kindly tune accordingly. [Pause.] It will not be raised, nor lowered, whatever happens. [Pause.] Look. [Long pause.] The familiar chamber. [Pause.] At the far end a window. [Pause.] On the right the indispensable door. [Pause.] On the left, against the wall, some kind of pallet. [Pause.] The light: faint, omnipresent. No visible source. As if all luminous. Faintly luminous. No shadow. [Pause.] No shadow. Colour: none. All grey. Shades of grey. [Pause.] The colour grey if you wish, shades of the colour grey. [Pause.] Forgive my stating the obvious. [Pause.] Keep that sound down. [Pause.] Now look closer. [Pause.] Floor.
3. *Cut to close-up of floor. Smooth grey rectangle 0.70 m. × 1.50 m. 5 seconds.*
4. v: Dust. [Pause.] Having seen that specimen of floor you have seen it all. Wall.
5. *Cut to close-up of wall. Smooth grey rectangle 0.70 m. × 1.50 m. 5 seconds.*
6. v: Dust. [Pause.] Knowing this, the kind of wall—
7. *Close-up of wall continued. 5 seconds.*
8. v: The kind of floor—
9. *Cut to close-up of floor. 5 seconds.*
10. v: Look again.
11. *Cut to general view from A. 5 seconds.*
12. v: Door.
13. *Cut to close-up of whole door. Smooth grey rectangle 0.70 m. × 2 m. Imperceptibly ajar. No knob. Faint music. 5 seconds.*
14. v: Window.
15. *Cut to close-up of whole window. Opaque sheet of glass 0.70 m. × 1.50 m. Imperceptibly ajar. No knob. 5 seconds.*

16. v: Pallet.
17. *Cut to close-up from above of whole pallet. 0.70 × 2 m.  
Grey sheet. Grey rectangular pillow at window end. 5  
seconds.*
18. v: Knowing all this, the kind of pallet—
19. *Close-up of whole pallet continued. 5 seconds.*
20. v: The kind of window—
21. *Cut to close-up of whole window. 5 seconds.*
22. v: The kind of door—
23. *Cut to close-up of whole door. Faint music. 5 seconds.*
24. v: The kind of wall—
25. *Cut to close-up of wall as before. 5 seconds.*
26. v: The kind of floor.
27. *Cut to close-up of floor as before. 5 seconds.*
28. v: Look again.
29. *Cut to general view. 5 seconds.*
30. v: Sole sign of life a seated figure.
31. *Move in slowly from A to B whence medium shot of F and  
door. F is seated on a stool, bowed forward, face hidden,  
clutching with both hands a small cassette not identifiable  
as such at this range. Faint music. 5 seconds.*
32. *Move in from B to C whence near shot of F and door.  
Cassette now identifiable. Music slightly louder, 5 seconds.*
33. *Move in from C to close-up of head, hands, cassette.  
Clutching hands, head bowed, face hidden. Music slightly  
louder. 5 seconds.*
34. *Move slowly back to A via C and B (no stops). Music pro-  
gressively fainter till at level of B it ceases to be heard.*
35. *General view from A. 5 seconds.*



## II

*All from A except 26-29*

1. v: He will now think he hears her.
2. F *raises head sharply, turns still crouched to door, fleeting face, tense pose. 5 seconds.*
3. v: No one.
4. F *relapses into opening pose, bowed over cassette. 5 seconds.*
5. v: Again.
6. Same as 2.
7. v: Now to door.
8. F *gets up, lays cassette on stool, goes to door, listens with right ear against door, back to camera. 5 seconds.*
9. v: No one. [Pause 5 seconds.] Open.
10. *With right hand F pushes door open half-way clockwise, looks out, back to camera. 2 seconds.*
11. v: No one.
12. F *removes hand from door which closes slowly of itself, stands irresolute, back to camera. 2 seconds.*
13. v: Now to window.
14. F *goes to window, stands irresolute, back to camera. 5 seconds.*
15. v: Open.
16. *With right hand F pushes window open half-way clockwise, looks out, back to camera. 5 seconds.*
17. v: No one.
18. F *removes hand from window which closes slowly of itself, stands irresolute, back to camera. 2 seconds.*
19. v: Now to pallet.
20. F *goes to head of pallet (window end), stands looking down at it. 5 seconds.*
21. F *turns to wall at head of pallet, goes to wall, looks at his face in mirror hanging on wall, invisible from A.*

22. v: [*Surprised.*] Ah!
23. *After 5 seconds F bows his head, stands before mirror with bowed head. 2 seconds.*
24. v: Now to door.
25. *F goes to stool, takes up cassette, sits, settles into opening pose, bowed over cassette. 2 seconds.*
26. *Same as I.31.*
27. *Same as I.32.*
28. *Same as I.33.*
29. *Same as I.34.*
30. *Same as I.35.*
31. v: He will now again think he hears her.
32. *Same as II.2.*
33. *F gets up, lays cassette on stool, goes to door, opens it as before, looks out, stoops forward. 10 seconds.*
34. *F straightens up, releases door which closes slowly of itself, stands irresolute, goes to stool, takes up cassette, sits irresolute, settles finally into opening pose, bowed over cassette. 5 seconds.*
35. *Faint music audible for first time at A. It grows louder. 5 seconds.*
36. v: Stop.
37. *Music stops. General view from A. 5 seconds.*
38. v: Repeat.

## III

1. *Immediately after 'Repeat' cut to near shot from C of F and door. Music audible. 5 seconds.*
2. *Move in to close-up of head, hands, cassette. Music slightly louder. 5 seconds.*
3. *Music stops. Action II.2. 5 seconds.*
4. *Action II.4. Music resumes. 5 seconds.*
5. *Move back to near shot from C of F and door. Music audible. 5 seconds.*
6. *Music stops. Action II.2. Near shot from C of F and door. 5 seconds.*
7. *Action II.8. Near shot from C of stool, cassette, F with right ear to door. 5 seconds.*
8. *Action II.10. Crescendo creak of door opening. Near shot from C of stool, cassette, F with right hand holding door open. 5 seconds.*
9. *Cut to view of corridor seen from door. Long narrow (0.70 m.) grey rectangle between grey walls, empty, far end in darkness. 5 seconds.*
10. *Cut back to near shot from C of stool, cassette, F holding door open. 5 seconds.*
11. *Action II.12. Decrescendo creak of door slowly closing. Near shot from C of stool, cassette, F standing irresolute, door. 5 seconds.*
12. *Cut to close-up from above of cassette on stool, small grey rectangle on larger rectangle of seat. 5 seconds.*
13. *Cut back to near shot of stool, cassette, F standing irresolute, door. 5 seconds.*
14. *Action II.14 seen from C. Near shot from C of F and window. 5 seconds.*
15. *Action II.16 seen from C. Crescendo creak of window opening. Faint sound of rain. Near shot from C of F with right hand holding window open. 5 seconds.*

16. *Cut to view from window. Night. Rain falling in dim light. Sound of rain slightly louder. 5 seconds.*
17. *Cut back to near shot from C of F with right hand holding window open. Faint sound of rain. 5 seconds.*
18. *Action II.18 seen from C. Decrescendo creak of window slowly closing. Near shot from C of F and window. 5 seconds.*
19. *Action II.20 seen from C. Near shot from C of F, mirror, head of pallet.*
20. *Cut to close-up from above of whole pallet.*
21. *Move down to tighter close-up of pallet moving slowly from pillow to foot and back to pillow. 5 seconds on pillow.*
22. *Move back to close-up from above of whole pallet. 5 seconds.*
23. *Cut back to near shot from C of F, mirror, head of pallet. 5 seconds.*
24. *Cut to close-up of mirror reflecting nothing. Small grey rectangle (same dimensions as cassette) against larger rectangle of wall. 5 seconds.*
25. *Cut back to near shot from C of F, mirror, head of pallet. 5 seconds.*
26. *Action II.21 seen from C. Near shot from C of F and mirror. 5 seconds.*
27. *Cut to close-up of F's face in mirror. 5 seconds. Eyes close. 5 seconds. Eyes open. 5 seconds. Head bows. Top of head in mirror. 5 seconds.*
28. *Cut back to near shot from C of F with bowed head, mirror, head of pallet. 5 seconds.*
29. *Action II.25 seen from C. Near shot from C of F settling into opening pose. Music audible once settled. 10 seconds.*
30. *Music stops. Action II.2 seen from C. Faint sound of steps approaching. They stop. Faint sound of knock on door. 5 seconds. Second knock, no louder. 5 seconds.*
31. *Action II.33 seen from C. Crescendo creak of door slowly opening. Near shot from C of stool, cassette, F holding door open, stooping forward. 10 seconds.*
32. *Cut to near shot of small boy full length in corridor before open door. Dressed in black oilskin with hood glistening with rain. White face raised to invisible F. 5 seconds. Boy shakes head faintly. Face still, raised. 5 seconds. Boy*

- shakes head again. Face still, raised. 5 seconds. Boy turns and goes. Sound of receding steps. Register from the same position his slow recession till he vanishes in dark at end of corridor. 5 seconds on empty corridor.*
33. *Cut back to near shot from C of stool, cassette, F holding door open. 5 seconds.*
34. *Action II.34 seen from C. Decrescendo creak of door slowly closing. 5 seconds.*
35. *Cut to general view from A. 5 seconds.*
36. *Music audible at A. It grows. 10 seconds.*
37. *With growing music move in slowly to close-up of head bowed right down over cassette now held in arms and invisible. Hold till end of Largo.*
38. *Silence. F raises head. Face seen clearly for second time. 10 seconds.*
39. *Move slowly back to A.*
40. *General view from A. 5 seconds.*
41. *Fade out.*

## MUSIC

From Largo of Beethoven's Fifth Piano Trio (*The Ghost*):

I.13	<i>beginning bar 47</i>
I.23	<i>beginning bar 49</i>
I.31-34	<i>beginning bar 19</i>
II.26-29	<i>beginning bar 64</i>
II.35-36	<i>beginning bar 71</i>
III.1-2, 4-5	<i>beginning bar 26</i>
III.29	<i>beginning bar 64</i>
III.36 to end	<i>beginning bar 82</i>

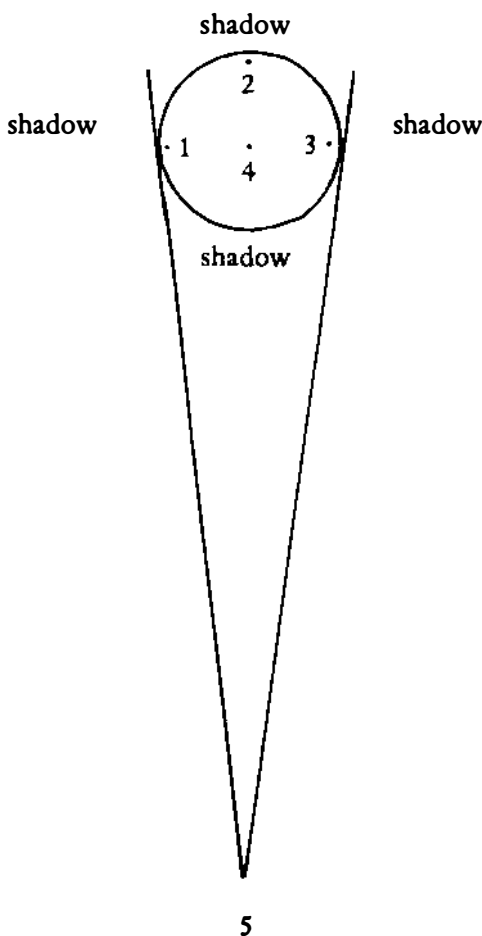
# **. . . but the clouds . . .**

**A play for television**

Written in English in October-November 1976. First televised on BBC2 on 17 April 1977. First published by Faber and Faber, London, in 1977.

- m** Near shot from behind of man sitting on invisible stool bowed over invisible table. Light grey robe and skullcap. Dark ground. Same shot throughout.
- m 1** m in set. Hat and greatcoat dark, robe and skullcap light.
- w** Close-up of woman's face reduced as far as possible to eyes and mouth. Same shot throughout.
- s** Long shot of set empty or with m 1. Same shot throughout.
- v** m's voice.





*Set:* circular, about 5 m. diameter, surrounded by deep shadow.

*Lighting:* a gradual lightening from dark periphery to maximum light at centre.

1. West, roads.
2. North, sanctum.
3. East, closet.
4. Standing position.
5. Camera.

1. *Dark. 5 seconds.*
2. *Fade up to M. 5 seconds.*
3. *v: When I thought of her it was always night. I came in—*
4. *Dissolve to s empty. 5 seconds. M1 in hat and greatcoat emerges from west shadow, advances five steps and stands facing east shadow. 2 seconds.*
5. *v: No—*
6. *Dissolve to M. 2 seconds.*
7. *v: No, that is not right. When she appeared it was always night. I came in—*
8. *Dissolve to s empty. 5 seconds. M1 in hat and greatcoat emerges from west shadow, advances five steps and stands facing east shadow. 5 seconds.*
9. *v: Right. Came in, having walked the roads since break of day, brought night home, stood listening [5 seconds.], finally went to closet—*
10. *M1 advances five steps to disappear in east shadow. 2 seconds.*
11. *v: Shed my hat and greatcoat, assumed robe and skull, reappeared—*
12. *M1 in robe and skullcap emerges from east shadow, advances five steps and stands facing west shadow. 5 seconds.*
13. *v: Reappeared and stood as before, only facing the other way, exhibiting the other outline [5 seconds.], finally turned and vanished—*
14. *M1 turns right and advances five steps to disappear in north shadow. 5 seconds.*
15. *v: Vanished within my little sanctum and crouched, where none could see me, in the dark.*
16. *Dissolve to M. 5 seconds.*
17. *v: Let us now make sure we have got it right.*
18. *Dissolve to s empty. 2 seconds. M1 in hat and greatcoat emerges from west shadow, advances five steps and stands facing east shadow. 2 seconds. He advances five steps to*

*disappear in east shadow. 2 seconds. He emerges in robe and skullcap from east shadow, advances five steps and stands facing west shadow. 2 seconds. He turns right and advances five steps to disappear in north shadow. 2 seconds.*

19. v: Right.

20. *Dissolve to m. 2 seconds.*

21. v: Then crouching there, in my little sanctum, in the dark, where none could see me, I began to beg, of her, to appear, to me. Such had long been my use and wont. No sound, a begging of the mind, to her, to appear, to me. Deep down into the dead of night, until I wearied, and ceased. Or of course until—

22. *Dissolve to w. 2 seconds.*

23. *Dissolve to m. 2 seconds.*

24. v: For had she never once appeared, all that time, would I have, could I have, gone on begging, all that time? Not just vanished within my little sanctum and busied myself with something else, or with nothing, busied myself with nothing? Until the time came, with break of day, to issue forth again, shed robe and skull, resume my hat and greatcoat, and issue forth again, to walk the roads.

25. *Dissolve to s empty. 2 seconds. m1 in robe and skullcap emerges from north shadow, advances five steps and stands facing camera. 2 seconds. He turns left and advances five steps to disappear in east shadow. 2 seconds. He emerges in hat and greatcoat from east shadow, advances five steps and stands facing west shadow. 2 seconds. He advances five steps to disappear in west shadow. 2 seconds.*

26. v: Right.

27. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*

28. v: Let us now distinguish three cases. One: she appeared and—

29. *Dissolve to w. 2 seconds.*

30. *Dissolve to m. 2 seconds.*

31. v: In the same breath was gone. 2 seconds. Two: she appeared and—

32. *Dissolve to w. 5 seconds.*

33. v: Lingered. 5 seconds. With those unseeing eyes I so begged when alive to look at me. 5 seconds.

34. *Dissolve to m. 2 seconds.*
35. v: Three: she appeared and—
36. *Dissolve to w. 5 seconds.*
37. v: After a moment—
38. w's lips move, uttering inaudibly: '... clouds ... but the clouds ... of the sky ...', v murmuring, synchronous with lips: '... but the clouds ...' Lips cease. 5 seconds.
39. v: Right.
40. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*
41. v: Let us now run through it again.
42. *Dissolve to s empty. 2 seconds. m1 in hat and greatcoat emerges from west shadow, advances five steps and stands facing east shadow. 2 seconds. He advances five steps to disappear in east shadow. 2 seconds. He emerges in robe and skullcap from east shadow, advances five steps and stands facing west shadow. 2 seconds. He turns right and advances five steps to disappear in north shadow. 2 seconds.*
43. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*
44. *Dissolve to w. 2 seconds.*
45. *Dissolve to m. 2 seconds.*
46. *Dissolve to w. 5 seconds.*
47. v: Look at me. 5 seconds.
48. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*
49. *Dissolve to w. 2 seconds. w's lips move, uttering inaudibly: '... clouds ... but the clouds ... of the sky ...', v murmuring, synchronous with lips: '... but the clouds ...' Lips cease. 5 seconds.*
50. v: Speak to me. 5 seconds.
51. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*
52. v: Right. There was of course a fourth case, or case nought, as I pleased to call it, by far the commonest, in the proportion say of nine hundred and ninety-nine to one, or nine hundred and ninety-eight to two, when I begged in vain, deep down into the dead of night, until I wearied, and ceased, and busied myself with something else, more ... rewarding, such as ... such as ... cube roots, for example, or with nothing, busied myself with nothing, that MINE, until the time came, with break of day, to issue forth again,

void my little sanctum, shed robe and skull, resume my hat and greatcoat, and issue forth again, to walk the roads.

[Pause.] The back roads.

53. *Dissolve to s empty. 2 seconds. m1 in robe and skullcap emerges from north shadow, advances five steps and stands facing camera. 2 seconds. He turns left and advances five steps to disappear in east shadow. 2 seconds. He emerges in hat and greatcoat from east shadow, advances five steps and stands facing west shadow. 2 seconds. He advances five steps to disappear in west shadow. 2 seconds.*

54. v: Right.

55. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*

56. *Dissolve to w. 5 seconds.*

57. v: '... but the clouds of the sky ... when the horizon fades ... or a bird's sleepy cry ... among the deepening shades ...'  
5 seconds.

58. *Dissolve to m. 5 seconds.*

59. *Fade out on m.*

60. *Dark. 5 seconds.*

# A Piece of Monologue

Written in English for actor David Warrilow in 1979 and performed by him in New York in 1980. First published by *Kenyon Review* in 1979.

*Curtain.*

*Faint diffuse light.*

*Speaker stands well off centre downstage audience left.*

*White hair, white nightgown, white socks.*

*Two metres to his left, same level, same height, standard lamp, skull-sized white globe, faintly lit.*

*Just visible extreme right, same level, white foot of pallet bed.*

*Ten seconds before speech begins.*

*Thirty seconds before end of speech lamplight begins to fail.*

*Lamp out. Silence. SPEAKER, globe, foot of pallet, barely visible in diffuse light.*

*Ten seconds.*

*Curtain.*

**SPEAKER:** Birth was the death of him. Again. Words are few.

Dying too. Birth was the death of him. Ghastly grinning ever since. Up at the lid to come. In cradle and crib. At suck first fiasco. With the first totters. From mammy to nanny and back. All the way. Bandied back and forth. So ghastly grinning on. From funeral to funeral. To now. This night. Two and a half billion seconds. Again. Two and a half billion seconds. Hard to believe so few. From funeral to funeral. Funerals of . . . he all but said of loved ones. Thirty thousand nights. Hard to believe so few. Born dead of night. Sun long sunk behind the larches. New needles turning green. In the room dark gaining. Till faint light from standard lamp. Wick turned low. And now. This night. Up at nightfall. Every nightfall. Faint light in room. Whence unknown. None from window. No. Next to none. No such thing as none. Grotes to window and stares out. Stands there staring out. Stock still staring out. Nothing stirring in that black vast. Grotes back in the end to where the lamp is standing. Was standing. When last went out.



Loose matches in right-hand pocket. Strikes one on his buttock the way his father taught him. Takes off milk white globe and sets it down. Match goes out. Strikes a second as before. Takes off chimney. Smoke-clouded. Holds it in left hand. Match goes out. Strikes a third as before and sets it to wick. Puts back chimney. Match goes out. Puts back globe. Turns wick low. Backs away to edge of light and turns to face east. Blank wall. So nightly. Up. Socks. Nightgown. Window. Lamp. Backs away to edge of light and stands facing blank wall. Covered with pictures once. Pictures of . . . he all but said of loved ones. Unframed. Unglazed. Pinned to wall with drawing-pins. All shapes and sizes. Down one after another. Gone. Torn to shreds and scattered. Strewn all over the floor. Not at one sweep. No sudden fit of . . . no word. Ripped from the wall and torn to shreds one by one. Over the years. Years of nights. Nothing on the wall now but the pins. Not all. Some out with the wrench. Some still pinning a shred. So stands there facing blank wall. Dying on. No more no less. No. Less. Less to die. Ever less. Like light at nightfall. Stands there facing east. Blank pinpocked surface once white in shadow. Could once name them all. There was father. That grey void. There mother. That other. There together. Smiling. Wedding day. There all three. That grey blot. There alone. He alone. So on. Not now. Forgotten. All gone so long. Gone. Ripped off and torn to shreds. Scattered all over the floor. Swept out of the way under the bed and left. Thousand shreds under the bed with the dust and spiders. All the . . . he all but said the loved ones. Stands there facing the wall staring beyond. Nothing there either. Nothing stirring there either. Nothing stirring anywhere. Nothing to be seen anywhere. Nothing to be heard anywhere. Room once full of sounds. Faint sounds. Whence unknown. Fewer and fainter as time wore on. Nights wore on. None now. No. No such thing as none. Rain some nights still slant against the panes. Or dropping gentle on the place beneath. Even now. Lamp smoking though wick turned low. Strange. Faint smoke issuing through vent in globe. Low ceiling stained by night after

night of this. Dark shapeless blot on surface elsewhere white. Once white. Stands facing wall after the various motions described. That is up at nightfall and into gown and socks. No. In them already. In them all night. All day. All day and night. Up at nightfall in gown and socks and after a moment to get his bearings gropes to window. Faint light in room. Unutterably faint. Whence unknown. Stands stock still staring out. Into black vast. Nothing there. Nothing stirring. That he can see. Hear. Dwells thus as if unable to move again. Or no will left to move again. Not enough will left to move again. Turns in the end and gropes to where he knows the lamp is standing. Thinks he knows. Was last standing. When last went out. Match one as described for globe. Two for chimney. Three for wick. Chimney and globe back on. Turns wick low. Backs away to edge of light and turns to face wall. East. Still as the lamp by his side. Gown and socks white to take faint light. Once white. Hair white to take faint light. Foot of pallet just visible edge of frame. Once white to take faint light. Stands there staring beyond. Nothing. Empty dark. Till first word always the same. Night after night the same. Birth. Then slow fade up of a faint form. Out of the dark. A window. Looking west. Sun long sunk behind the larches. Light dying. Soon none left to die. No. No such thing as no light. Starless moonless heaven. Dies on to dawn and never dies. There in the dark that window. Night slowly falling. Eyes to the small pane gaze at that first night. Turn from it in the end to face the darkened room. There in the end slowly a faint hand. Holding aloft a lighted spill. In the light of spill faintly the hand and milkwhite globe. Then second hand. In light of spill. Takes off globe and disappears. Reappears empty. Takes off chimney. Two hands and chimney in light of spill. Spill to wick. Chimney back on. Hand with spill disappears. Second hand disappears. Chimney alone in gloom. Hand reappears with globe. Globe back on. Turns wick low. Disappears. Pale globe alone in gloom. Glimmer of brass bedrail. Fade. Birth the death of him. That nevoid smile. Thirty thousand nights. Stands at edge of lamplight staring

beyond. Into dark whole again. Window gone. Hands gone. Light gone. Gone. Again and again. Again and again gone. Till dark slowly parts again. Grey light. Rain pelting. Umbrellas round a grave. Seen from above. Streaming black canopies. Black ditch beneath. Rain bubbling in the black mud. Empty for the moment. That place beneath. Which . . . he all but said which loved one? Thirty seconds. To add to the two and a half billion odd. Then fade. Dark whole again. Blest dark. No. No such thing as whole. Stands staring beyond half hearing what he's saying. He? The words falling from his mouth. Making do with his mouth. Lights lamp as described. Backs away to edge of light and and turns to face wall. Stares beyond into dark. Waits for first word always the same. It gathers in his mouth. Parts lips and thrusts tongue forward. Birth. Parts the dark. Slowly the window. That first night. The room. The spill. The hands. The lamp. The gleam of brass. Fade. Gone. Again and again. Again and again gone. Mouth agape. A cry. Stifled by nasal. Dark parts. Grey light. Rain pelting. Streaming umbrellas. Ditch. Bubbling black mud. Coffin out of frame. Whose? Fade. Gone. Move on to other matters. Try to move on. To other matters. How far from wall? Head almost touching. As at window. Eyes glued to pane staring out. Nothing stirring. Black vast. Stands there stock still staring out as if unable to move again. Or gone the will to move again. Gone. Faint cry in his ear. Mouth agape. Closed with hiss of breath. Lips joined. Feel soft touch of lip on lip. Lip lipping lip. Then parted by cry as before. Where is he now? Back at window staring out. Eyes glued to pane. As if looking his last. Turns away at last and gropes through faint unaccountable light to unseen lamp. White gown moving through that gloom. Once white. Lights and moves to face wall as described. Head almost touching. Stands there staring beyond waiting for first word. It gathers in his mouth. Birth. Parts lips and thrusts tongue between them. Tip of tongue. Feel soft touch of tongue on lips. Of lips on tongue. Fade up in outer dark of window. Stare beyond through rift in dark to other dark. Further dark. Sun long sunk behind the larches. Nothing stirring. Nothing faintly stirring. Stock still eyes glued to pane. As if looking his last. At that first night. Of thirty thousand odd. Turn away in the end to darkened room.

Where soon to be. This night to be. Spill. Hands. Lamp. Gleam of brass. Pale globe alone in gloom. Brass bedrail catching light. Thirty seconds. To swell the two and a half billion odd. Fade. Gone. Cry. Snuffed with breath of nostrils. Again and again. Again and again gone. Till whose grave? Which . . . he all but said which loved one's? He? Black ditch in pelting rain. Way out through the grey rift in dark. Seen from on high. Streaming canopies. Bubbling black mud. Coffin on its way. Loved one . . . he all but said loved one on his way. Her way. Thirty seconds. Fade. Gone. Stands there staring beyond. Into dark whole again. No. No such thing as whole. Head almost touching wall. White hair catching light. White gown. White socks. White foot of pallet edge of frame stage left. Once white. Least . . . give and head rests on wall. But no. Stock still head haught staring beyond. Nothing stirring. Faintly stirring. Thirty thousand nights of gñosts beyond. Beyond that black beyond. Ghost light. Ghost nights. Ghost rooms. Ghost graves. Ghost . . . he all but said ghost loved ones. Waiting on the rip word. Stands there staring beyond at that black veil lips quivering to half-heard words. Treating of other matters. Trying to treat of other matters. Till half hears there are no other matters. Never were other matters. Never two matters. Never but the one matter. The dead and gone. The dying and the going. From the word go. The word begone. Such as the light going now. Beginning to go. In the room. Where else? Unnoticed by him staring beyond. The globe alone. Not the other. The unaccountable. From nowhere. On all sides nowhere. Unutterably faint. The globe alone. Alone gone.



Rockaby

Written in English in 1980. First performed in Buffalo, New York in 1981 with Billie Whitelaw as W and V, directed by Alan Schneider, produced by Dan Labeille. First published by Grove Press in 1981.

## NOTES

### *Light:*

Subdued on chair. Rest of stage dark.

Subdued spot on face constant throughout, unaffected by successive fades. Either wide enough to include narrow limits of rock or concentrated on face when still or at mid-rock. Then throughout speech face slightly swaying in and out of light.

Opening fade-up: first spot on face alone, long pause, then light on chair.

Final fade-out: first chair, long pause with spot on face alone, head slowly sinks, come to rest, fade out spot.

### *W:*

Prematurely old. Unkempt grey hair. Huge eyes in white expressionless face. White hands holding ends of armrests.

### *Eyes:*

Now closed, now open in unblinking gaze. About equal proportions section 1, increasingly closed 2 and 3, closed for good halfway through 4.

### *Costume:*

Black lacy high-necked evening gown. Long sleeves. Jet sequins to glitter when rocking. Incongruous flimsy head-dress set askew with extravagant trimming to catch light when rocking.

### *Attitude:*

Completely still till fade-out of chair. Then in light of spot head slowly inclined.

### *Chair:*

Pale wood highly polished to gleam when rocking. Footrest. Vertical back. Rounded inward curving arms to suggest embrace.



*Rock:*

Slight. Slow. Controlled mechanically without assistance from w .

*Voice:*

Towards end of 4, say from 'saying to herself' on, gradually softer. Lines in italics spoken by w with v. A little softer each time. w's 'more' a little softer each time.

w : *Woman in chair.*

v : *Her recorded voice.*

*Fade up on w in rocking-chair facing front downstage slightly  
off centre audience left.*

*Long pause.*

w : More.

*[Pause. Rock and voice together.]*

v : till in the end

the day came

in the end came

close of a long day

when she said

to herself

whom else

time she stopped

*time she stopped*

going to and fro

all eyes

all sides

high and low

for another

another like herself

another creature like herself

a little like

going to and fro

all eyes

all sides

high and low

for another

till in the end

close of a long day

to herself  
whom else  
time she stopped  
*time she stopped*  
going to and fro  
all eyes  
all sides  
high and low  
for another  
another living soul  
going to and fro  
all eyes like herself  
all sides  
high and low  
for another  
another like herself  
a little like  
going to and fro  
till in the end  
close of a long day  
to herself  
whom else  
time she stopped  
going to and fro  
time she stopped  
*time she stopped*

[*Together: echo of 'time she stopped', coming to rest of  
rock, faint fade of light.*

*Long pause.*]

w: More.

[*Pause. Rock and voice together.*]

v: so in the end  
close of a long day  
went back in  
in the end went back in  
saying to herself  
whom else

time she stopped  
*time she stopped*  
going to and fro  
time she went and sat  
at her window  
quiet at her window  
facing other windows  
so in the end  
close of a long day  
in the end went and sat  
went back in and sat  
at her window  
let up the blind and sat  
quiet at her window  
only window  
facing other windows  
other only windows  
all eyes  
all sides  
high and low  
for another  
at her window  
another like herself  
a little like  
another living soul  
one other living soul  
at her window  
gone in like herself  
gone back in  
in the end  
close of a long day  
saying to herself  
whom else  
time she stopped  
*time she stopped*  
going to and fro  
time she went and sat

at her window  
quiet at her window  
only window  
facing other windows  
other only windows  
all eyes  
all sides  
high and low  
for another  
another like herself  
a little like  
another living soul  
one other living soul

*[Together: echo of 'living soul', coming to rest of rock,  
faint fade of light.*

*Long pause.]*

w: More.

*[Pause. Rock and voice together.]*

v: till in the end  
the day came  
in the end came  
close of a long day  
sitting at her window  
quiet at her window  
only window  
facing other windows  
other only windows  
all blinds down  
never one up  
hers alone up  
till the day came  
in the end came  
close of a long day  
sitting at her window  
quiet at her window  
all eyes  
all sides

high and low  
for a blind up  
one blind up  
no more  
never mind a face  
behind the pane  
famished eyes  
like hers  
to see  
be seen  
no  
a blind up  
like hers  
a little like  
one blind up no more  
another creature there  
somewhere there  
behind the pane  
another living soul  
one other living soul  
till the day came  
in the end came  
close of a long day  
when she said  
to herself  
whom else  
time she stopped  
*time she stopped*  
sitting at her window  
quiet at her window  
only window  
facing other windows  
other only windows  
all eyes  
all sides  
high and low  
time she stopped

*time she stopped*

*[Together: echo of 'time she stopped', coming to rest of rock, faint fade of light.*

*Long pause.]*

w : More.

*[Pause. Rock and voice together.]*

v : so in the end

close of a long day

went down

in the end went down

down the steep stair

let down the blind and down

right down

into the old rocker

mother rocker

where mother rocked

all the years

all in black

best black

sat and rocked

rocked

till her end came

in the end came

off her head they said

gone off her head

but harmless

no harm in her

dead one day

no

night

dead one night

in the rocker

in her best black

head fallen

and the rocker rocking

rocking away

so in the end

close of a long day  
went down  
in the end went down  
down the steep stair  
let down the blind and down  
right down  
into the old rocker  
those arms at last  
and rocked  
rocked  
with closed eyes  
closing eyes  
she so long all eyes  
famished eyes  
all sides  
high and low  
to and fro  
at her window  
to see  
be seen  
till in the end  
close of a long day  
to herself  
whom else  
time she stopped  
let down the blind and stopped  
time she went down  
down the steep stair  
time she went right down  
was her own other  
own other living soul  
so in the end  
close of a long day  
went down  
let down the blind and down  
right down  
into the old rocker



and rocked  
rocked  
saying to herself  
no  
done with that  
the rocker  
those arms at last  
saying to the rocker  
rock her off  
stop her eyes  
fuck life  
stop her eyes  
rock her off  
rock her off

*[Together: echo of 'rock her off', coming to rest of rock,  
slow fade out.]*

# Ohio Impromptu

**Written in 1981. First performed at Ohio State University in 1981.  
First published by Grove Press in 1981.**

L = *Listener.*

R = *Reader.*

*As alike in appearance as possible.*

*Light on table midstage. Rest of stage in darkness.*

*Plain white deal table say 8' x 4'.*

*Two plain armless white deal chairs.*

*L seated at table facing front towards end of long side audience right. Bowed head propped on right hand. Face hidden. Left hand on table. Long black coat. Long white hair.*

*R seated at table in profile centre of short side audience right. Bowed head propped on right hand. Left hand on table. Book on table before him open at last pages. Long black coat. Long white hair.*

*Black wide-brimmed hat at centre of table.*

*Fade up.*

*Ten seconds.*

*R turns page.*

*Pause.*

R: [*Reading.*] Little is left to tell. In a last—

[*L knocks with left hand on table.*]

Little is left to tell.

[*Pause. Knock.*]

In a last attempt to obtain relief he moved from where they had been so long together to a single room on the far bank. From its single window he could see the downstream extremity of the Isle of Swans.

[*Pause.*]

Relief he had hoped would flow from unfamiliarity. Unfamiliar room. Unfamiliar scene. Out to where nothing ever shared. Back to where nothing ever shared. From this he had once half hoped some measure of relief might flow.

[*Pause.*]

Day after day he could be seen slowly pacing the islet.  
Hour after hour. In his long black coat no matter what the  
weather and old world Latin Quarter hat. At the tip he  
would always pause to dwell on the receding stream. How  
in joyous eddies its two arms conflowed and flowed united  
on. Then turn and his slow steps retrace.

[*Pause.*]

In his dreams—

[*Knock.*]

Then turn and his slow steps retrace.

[*Pause. Knock.*]

In his dreams he had been warned against this change. Seen  
the dear face and heard the unspoken words, Stay where  
we were so long alone together, my shade will comfort  
you.

[*Pause.*]

Could he not—

[*Knock.*]

Seen the dear face and heard the unspoken words, Stay  
where we were so long alone together, my shade will  
comfort you.

[*Pause. Knock.*]

Could he not now turn back? Acknowledge his error and  
return to where they were once so long alone together.  
Alone together so much shared. No. What he had done  
alone could not be undone. Nothing he had ever done  
alone could ever be undone. By him alone.

[*Pause.*]

In this extremity his old terror of night laid hold on him  
again. After so long a lapse that as if never been. [*Pause.*  
*Looks closer.*] Yes, after so long a lapse that as if never  
been. Now with redoubled force the fearful symptoms  
described at length page forty paragraph four. [*Starts to*  
*turn back the pages. Checked by L's left hand. Resumes*  
*relinquished page.*] White nights now again his portion. As  
when his heart was young. No sleep no braving sleep till—  
[*Turns page.*—dawn of day.

[*Pause.*]

Little is left to tell. One night—

[*Knock.*]

Little is left to tell.

[*Pause. Knock.*]

One night as he sat trembling head in hands from head to foot a man appeared to him and said, I have been sent by—and here he named the dear name—to comfort you. Then drawing a worn volume from the pocket of his long black coat he sat and read till dawn. Then disappeared without a word.

[*Pause.*]

Some time later he appeared again at the same hour with the same volume and this time without preamble sat and read it through again the long night through. Then disappeared without a word.

[*Pause.*]

So from time to time unheralded he would appear to read the sad tale through again and the long night away. Then disappear without a word.

[*Pause.*]

With never a word exchanged they grew to be as one.

[*Pause.*]

Till the night came at last when having closed the book and dawn at hand he did not disappear but sat on without a word.

[*Pause.*]

Finally he said, I have had word from—and here he named the dear name—that I shall not come again. I saw the dear face and heard the unspoken words, No need to go to him again, even were it in your power.

[*Pause.*]

So the sad—

[*Knock.*]

Saw the dear face and heard the unspoken words, No need to go to him again, even were it in your power.

[*Pause. Knock.*]

So the sad tale a last time told they sat on as though turned to stone. Through the single window dawn shed no light. From the street no sound of reawakening. Or was it that buried in who knows what thoughts they paid no

heed? To light of day. To sound of reawakening. What thoughts who knows. Thoughts, no, not thoughts. Profounds of mind. Buried in who knows what profounds of mind. Of mindlessness. Whither no light can reach. No sound. So sat on as though turned to stone. The sad tale a last time told.

[*Pause.*]

Nothing is left to tell.

[*Pause. R makes to close book.*

*Knock. Book half closed.*]

Nothing is left to tell.

[*Pause. R closes book.*

*Knock.*

*Silence. Five seconds.*

*Simultaneously they lower their right hands to table, raise their heads and look at each other. Unblinking.*

*Expressionless:*

*Ten seconds.*

*Fade out.*]

Quad

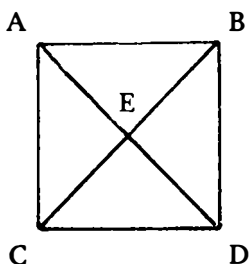


*Quad* was first transmitted in Germany by Süddeutscher Rundfunk in 1982 under the title *Quadrat 1+2*. It was first transmitted by BBC2 on 16 December 1982. First published by Faber and Faber, London, in 1984.

A piece for four players, light and percussion.

The players (1, 2, 3, 4) pace the given area, each following his particular course.

Area: square. Length of side: 6 paces.



Course 1: AC, CB, BA, AD, DB, BC, CD, DA

Course 2: BA, AD, DB, BC, CD, DA, AC, CB

Course 3: CD, DA, AC, CB, BA, AD, DB, BC

Course 4: DB, BC, CD, DA, AC, CB, BA, AD

1 enters at A, completes his course and is joined by 3.  
Together they complete their courses and are joined by 4.  
Together all three complete their courses and are joined by 2.  
Together all four complete their courses. Exit 1. 2, 3 and 4  
continue and complete their courses. Exit 3. 2 and 4 continue  
and complete their courses. Exit 4. End of 1st series. 2 con-  
tinues, opening 2nd series, completes his course and is joined by  
1. Etc. Unbroken movement.

1st series (as above): 1, 13, 134, 1342, 342, 42

2nd series: 2, 21, 214, 2143, 143, 43

3rd series: 3, 32, 321, 3214, 214, 14

4th series: 4, 43, 432, 4321, 321, 21

Four possible solos all given.

Six possible duos all given (two twice).

Four possible trios all given twice.

Without interruption begin repeat and fade out on 1 pacing alone.

### *Light (2)*

Dim on area from above fading out into dark.

Four sources of differently coloured light clustered together.

Each player has his particular light, to be turned on when he enters, kept on while he paces, turned off when he exits.

Say 1 white, 2 yellow, 3 blue, 4 red. Then

1st series: white, white + blue, white + blue + red, white + blue + red + yellow, blue + red + yellow, red + yellow.

2nd series: yellow, yellow + white, yellow + white + red etc.

All possible light combinations given.

### *Percussion*

Four types of percussion, say drum, gong, triangle, wood block.

Each player has his particular percussion, to sound when he enters, continue while he paces, cease when he exits.

Say 1 drum, 2 gong, 3 triangle, 4 wood block. Then

1st series: drum, drum + triangle, drum + triangle + wood block etc. Same system as for light.

All possible percussion combinations given.

Percussion intermittent in all combinations to allow footsteps alone to be heard at intervals.

Pianissimo throughout.

Percussionists barely visible in shadow on raised podium at back of set.

### *Footsteps*

Each player has his particular sound.

### *Costumes*

Gowns reaching to ground, cowls hiding faces.

Each player has his particular colour corresponding to his light. 1 white, 2 yellow, 3 blue, 4 red.

All possible costume combinations given.

*Players*

As alike in build as possible. Short and slight for preference.

Some ballet training desirable. Adolescents a possibility. Sex indifferent.

*Camera*

Raised frontal. Fixed. Both players and percussionists in frame.

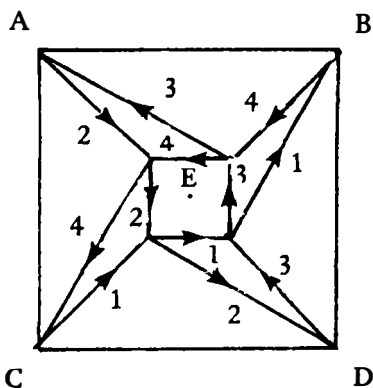
*Time (3)*

On basis of one pace per second and allowing for time lost at angles and centre approximately 25 minutes.

*Problem (4)*

Negotiation of E without rupture of rhythm when three or four players cross paths at this point. Or, if ruptures accepted, how best exploit?

1. This original scenario (*Quad I*) was followed in the Stuttgart production by a variation (*Quad II*). (5)
2. Abandoned as impracticable. Constant neutral light throughout.
3. Overestimated. *Quad I*, fast tempo. 15' approx. *Quad II*, slow tempo, series 1 only, 5' approx.
4. E supposed a danger zone. Hence deviation. Manoeuvre established at outset by first solo at first diagonal (CB). E.g. series 1:



5. No colour, all four in identical white gowns, no percussion, footsteps only sound, slow tempo, series 1 only.

# Catastrophe

for Vaclav Havel

Written in French in 1982. First performed at the Avignon Festival in 1982. First published in the United States in *Evergreen Review*, 1984.

*Director (D).*

*His female assistant (A).*

*Protagonist (P).*

*Luke, in charge of the lighting, offstage (L).*

*Rehearsal. Final touches to the last scene. Bare stage. A and L have just set the lighting. D has just arrived.*

*D in an armchair downstairs audience left. Fur coat. Fur toque to match. Age and physique unimportant.*

*A standing beside him. White overall. Bare head. Pencil on ear. Age and physique unimportant.*

*P midstage standing on a black block 18 inches high. Black wide-brimmed hat. Black dressing-gown to ankles. Barefoot. Head bowed. Hands in pockets. Age and physique unimportant.*

*D and A contemplate P. Long pause.*

*A: [Finally.] Like the look of him?*

*D: So so. [Pause.] Why the plinth?*

*A: To let the stalls see the feet.*

*[Pause.]*

*D: Why the hat?*

*A: To help hide the face.*

*[Pause.]*

*D: Why the gown?*

*A: To have him all black.*

*[Pause.]*

*D: What has he on underneath? [A moves towards P.] Say it.*

*[A halts.]*

*A: His night attire.*

*D: Colour?*

*A: Ash.*



[D takes out a cigar.]

D: Light. [A returns, lights the cigar, stands still. D smokes.]  
How's the skull?

A: You've seen it.

D: I forget. [A moves towards P.] Say it.  
[A halts.]

A: Moulting. A few tufts.

D: Colour?

A: Ash.

[Pause.]

D: Why hands in pockets?

A: To help have him all black.

D: They mustn't.

A: I make a note. [She takes out a pad, takes pencil, notes.]  
Hands exposed.

[She puts back pad and pencil.]

D: How are they? [A at a loss. Irritably.] The hands, how are  
the hands?

A: You've seen them.

D: I forget.

A: Crippled. Fibrous degeneration.

D: Clawlike?

A: If you like.

D: Two claws?

A: Unless he clench his fists.

D: He mustn't.

A: I make a note. [She takes out pad, takes pencil, notes.]  
Hands limp.

[She puts back pad and pencil.]

D: Light. [A returns, relights the cigar, stands still. D smokes.]  
Good. Now let's have a look. [A at a loss. Irritably.] Get  
going. Lose that gown. [He consults his chronometer.]  
Step on it, I have a caucus.

[A goes to P, takes off the gown. P submits, inert. A steps  
back, the gown over her arm. P in old grey pyjamas, head  
bowed, fists clenched. Pause.]

A: Like him better without? [Pause.] He's shivering.

D: Not all that. Hat.

[A advances, takes off hat, steps back, hat in hand. Pause.]

A: Like that cranium?

D: Needs whitening.

A: I make a note. [*She takes out pad, takes pencil, notes.*]  
Whiten cranium.

[*She puts back pad and pencil.*]

D: The hands. [*A at a loss. Irritably.*] The fists. Get going. [*A advances, unclenches fists, steps back.*] And whiten.

A: I make a note. [*She takes out pad, takes pencil, notes.*]  
Whiten hands.

[*She puts back pad and pencil. They contemplate P.*]

D: [*Finally.*] Something wrong. [*Distraught.*] What is it?

A: [*Timidly.*] What if we were . . . were to . . . join them?

D: No harm trying. [*A advances, joins the hands, steps back.*]  
Higher. [*A advances, raises waist high the joined hands, steps back.*] A touch more. [*A advances, raises breast-high the joined hands.*] Stop! [*A steps back.*] Better. It's coming. Light.

[*A returns, relights cigar, stands still. D smokes.*]

A: He's shivering.

D: Bless his heart.

[*Pause.*]

A: [*Timidly.*] What about a little . . . a little . . . gag?

D: For God's sake! This craze for explicitation! Every i dotted to death! Little gag! For God's sake!

A: Sure he won't utter?

D: Not a squeak. [*He consults his chronometer.*] Just time. I'll go and see how it looks from the house.

[*Exit D, not to appear again. A subsides in the armchair, springs to her feet no sooner seated, takes out a rag, wipes vigorously back and seat of chair, discards rag, sits again. Pause.*]

D: [*Off, plaintive.*] I can't see the toes. [*Irritably.*] I'm sitting in the front row of the stalls and can't see the toes.

A: [*Rising.*] I make a note. [*She takes out a pad, takes pencil, notes.*] Raise pedestal.

D: There's a trace of face.

A: I make a note.

[*She takes out pad, takes pencil, makes to note.*]

D: Down the head. [*A at a loss. Irritably.*] Get going. Down his

head. [A puts back pad and pencil, goes to P, bows his head further, steps back.] A shade more. [A advances, bows the head further.] Stop! [A steps back.] Fine. It's coming. [Pause.] Could do with more nudity.

A: I make a note.

[She takes out pad, makes to take her pencil.]

D: Get going! Get going! [A puts back the pad, goes to P, stands irresolute.] Bare the neck. [A undoes top buttons, parts the flaps, steps back.] The legs. The shins. [A advances, rolls up to below knee one trouser-leg, steps back.] The other. [Same for other leg, steps back.] Higher. The knees. [A advances, rolls up to above knees both trouser-legs, steps back.] And whiten.

A: I make a note. [She takes out pad, takes pencil, notes.] Whiten all flesh.

D: It's coming. Is Luke around?

A: [Calling.] Luke! [Pause. Louder.] Luke!

L: [Off, distant.] I hear you. [Pause. Nearer.] What's the trouble now?

A: Luke's around.

D: Blackout stage.

L: What?

[A transmits in technical terms. Fade-out of general light. Light on P alone. A in shadow.]

D: Just the head.

L: What?

[A transmits in technical terms. Fade-out of light on P's body. Light on head alone. Long pause.]

D: Lovely.

[Pause.]

A: [Timidly.] What if he were to . . . were to . . . raise his head . . . an instant . . . show his face . . . just an instant.

D: For God's sake! What next? Raise his head? Where do you think we are? In Patagonia? Raise his head? For God's sake! [Pause.] Good. There's our catastrophe. In the bag. Once more and I'm off.

A: [To L.] Once more and he's off.

[Fade-up of light on P's body. Pause. Fade-up of general light.]

D: Stop! [*Pause.*] Now . . . let 'em have it. [*Fade-out of general light. Pause. Fade-out of light on body. Light on head alone. Long pause.*] Terrific! He'll have them on their feet. I can hear it from here.

[*Pause. Distant storm of applause. P raises his head, fixes the audience. The applause falters, dies.*

*Long pause.*

*Fade-out of light on face.]*



# Nacht und Träume

*Nacht und Träume* was written for, and produced by, Süd-deutscher Rundfunk in 1982. It was first transmitted on 19 May 1983.

*Elements.*

Evening light.

Dreamer (A).

His dreamt self (B).

Dreamt hands R (right) and L (left).

Last 7 bars of Schubert's *Lied, Nacht und Träume*.

1. Fade up on a dark empty room lit only by evening light from a window set high in back wall.  
Left foreground, faintly lit, a man seated at a table. Right profile, head bowed, grey hair, hands resting on table. Clearly visible only head and hands and section of table on which they rest.
2. Softly hummed, male voice, last 7 bars of Schubert's *Lied, Nacht und Träume*.
3. Fade out evening light.
4. Softly sung, with words, last 3 bars of *Lied* beginning 'Holde Träume . . .'
5. Fade down A as he bows his head further to rest on hands. Thus minimally lit he remains just visible throughout dream as first viewed.
6. A dreams. Fade up on B on an invisible podium about 4 feet above floor level, middle ground, well right of centre. He is seated at a table in the same posture as A dreaming, bowed head resting on hands, but left profile, faintly lit by kinder light than A's.
7. From dark beyond and above B's head L appears and rests gently on it.
8. B raises his head, L withdraws and disappears.
9. From same dark R appears with a cup, conveys it gently to B's lips. B drinks, R disappears.
10. R reappears with a cloth, wipes gently B's brow, disappears with cloth.



11. B raises his head further to gaze up at invisible face.
12. B raises his right hand, still gazing up, and holds it raised palm upward.
13. R reappears and rests gently on B's right hand, B still gazing up.
14. B transfers gaze to joined hands.
15. B raises his left hand and rests it on joined hands.
16. Together hands sink to table and on them B's head.
17. L reappears and rests gently on B's head.
18. Fade out dream.
19. Fade up A and evening light.
20. A raises head to its opening position.
21. *Lied* as before (2).
22. Fade out evening light.
23. Close of *Lied* as before (4).
24. Fade down A as before (5).
25. A dreams. Fade up on B as before (6).
26. Move in slowly to close-up of B, losing A.
27. Dream as before (7–16) in close-up and slower motion.
28. Withdraw slowly to opening viewpoint, recovering A.
29. Fade out dream.
30. Fade out A.

**What Where**

The premiere of this play took place at the Harold Clurman Theatre, New York, on 15 June 1983. First published in the United States in *Evergreen Review*, 1984.

**BAM**

**BEM**

**BIM**

**BOM**

**VOICE OF BAM (v)**

*Note*

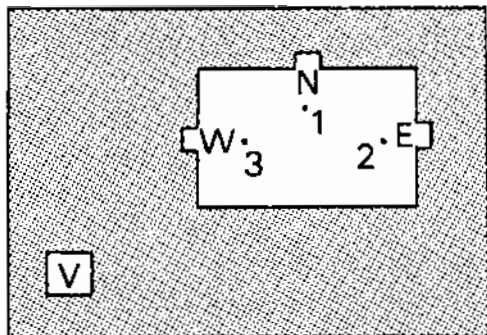
*Players as alike as possible.*

*Same long grey gown.*

*Same long grey hair.*

*v in the shape of a small megaphone at head level.*

*Playing area (P) rectangle 3m x 2m, dimly lit, surrounded by shadow, stage right as seen from house. Downstage left, dimly lit, surrounded by shadow, v.*



*General dark.*

*Light on v.*

*Pause.*

**v:** We are the last five.

In the present as were we still.

It is spring.

Time passes.

First without words.

I switch on.

[*Light on P.*

*BAM at 3 head haught, BOM at 1 head bowed.*

*Pause.*]

Not good.

I switch off.

[*Light off P.*]

I start again.

We are the last five.

It is spring.  
 Time passes.  
 First without words.  
 I switch on.  
 [*Light on P.*  
*BAM alone at 3 head haught.*  
*Pause.*]  
 Good.  
 I am alone.  
 It is spring.  
 Time passes.  
 First without words.  
 In the end Bom appears.  
 Reappears.  
 [*BOM enters at N, halts at 1 head bowed.*  
*Pause.*  
*BIM enters at E, halts at 2 head haught.*  
*Pause.*  
*BIM exits at E followed by BOM.*  
*Pause.*  
*BIM enters at E, halts at 2 head bowed.*  
*Pause.*  
*BEM enters at N, halts at 1 head haught.*  
*Pause.*  
*BEM exits at N followed by BIM.*  
*Pause.*  
*BEM enters at N, halts at 1 head bowed.*  
*Pause.*  
*BAM exits at W followed by BEM.*  
*Pause.*  
*BAM enters at W, halts at 3 head bowed.*  
*Pause.*]  
 Good.  
 I switch off.  
 [*Light off P.*]  
 I start again.  
 We are the last five.  
 It is spring.  
 Time passes.

I switch on.

[*Light on P.*

BAM *alone at 3 head haught.*

*Pause.*]

Good.

I am alone.

It is spring.

Time passes.

Now with words.

In the end Bom appears.

Reappears.

[BOM *enters at N, halts at 1 head bowed.*]

BAM: Well?

BOM: [*Head bowed throughout.*] Nothing.

BAM: He didn't say anything?

BOM: No.

BAM: You gave him the works?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: And he didn't say anything?

BOM: No.

BAM: He wept?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: Screamed?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: Begged for mercy?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: But didn't say anything?

BOM: No.

V: Not good.

I start again.

BAM: Well?

BOM: Nothing.

BAM: He didn't say it?

V: Good.

BOM: No.

BAM: You gave him the works?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: And he didn't say it?

BOM: No.

BAM: He wept?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: Screamed?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: Begged for mercy?

BOM: Yes.

BAM: But didn't say it?

BOM: No.

BAM: Then why stop?

BOM: He passed out.

BAM: And you didn't revive him?

BOM: I tried.

BAM: Well?

BOM: I couldn't.

[*Pause.*]

BAM: It's a lie. [*Pause.*] He said it to you. [*Pause.*] Confess he said it to you. [*Pause.*] You'll be given the works until you confess.

V: Good.

In the end Bim appears.

[*BIM enters at E, halts at 2 head haught.*]

BAM: [*To BIM.*] Are you free?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: Take him away and give him the works until he confesses.

BIM: What must he confess?

BAM: That he said it to him.

BIM: Is that all?

BAM: Yes.

V: Not good.

I start again.

BAM: Take him away and give him the works until he confesses.

BIM: What must he confess?

BAM: That he said it to him.

BIM: Is that all?

BAM: And what.

V: Good.

BIM: Is that all?

BAM: Yes.

BIM: Then stop?



BAM: Yes.

BIM: Good. [*To BOM.*] Come.

[*BIM exits at E followed by BOM.*]

V: Good.

I am alone.

It is summer.

Time passes.

In the end Bim appears.

Reappears.

[*BIM enters at E, halts at 2 head bowed.*]

BAM: Well?

BIM: [*Head bowed throughout.*] Nothing.

BAM: He didn't say it?

BIM: No.

BAM: You gave him the works?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: And he didn't say it?

BIM: No.

V: Not good.

I start again.

BAM: Well?

BIM: Nothing.

BAM: He didn't say where?

V: Good.

BIM: Where?

V: Ah!

BAM: Where.

BIM: No.

BAM: You gave him the works?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: And he didn't say where?

BIM: No.

BAM: He wept?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: Screamed?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: Begged for mercy?

BIM: Yes.

BAM: But didn't say where?

BIM: No.

BAM: Then why stop?

BIM: He passed out.

BAM: And you didn't revive him?

BIM: I tried.

BAM: Well?

BIM: I couldn't.

[*Pause.*]

BAM: It's a lie. [*Pause.*] He said where to you. [*Pause.*] Confess he said where to you. [*Pause.*] You'll be given the works until you confess.

v: Good.

In the end Bem appears.

[*BEM enters at N, halts at 1 head haught.*]

BAM: [*To BEM.*] Are you free?

BEM: Yes.

BAM: Take him away and give him the works until he confesses.

BEM: What must he confess?

BAM: That he said where to him.

BEM: Is that all?

BAM: Yes.

v: Not good.

I start again.

BAM: Take him away and give him the works until he confesses.

BEM: What must he confess?

BAM: That he said where to him.

BEM: Is that all?

BAM: And where.

v: Good.

BEM: Is that all?

BAM: Yes.

BEM: Then stop?

BAM: Yes.

BEM: Good. [*To BIM.*] Come.

[*BEM exits at N followed by BIM.*]

v: Good.

I am alone.

It is autumn.

Time passes.

In the end Bem appears.

Reappears.

[BEM enters at N, halts at 1 head bowed.]

BAM: Well?

BEM: [Head bowed throughout.] Nothing.

BAM: He didn't say where?

BEM: No.

V: So on.

BAM: It's a lie. [Pause.] He said where to you. [Pause.] Confess he said where to you. [Pause.] You'll be given the works until you confess.

BEM: What must I confess?

BAM: That he said where to you.

BEM: Is that all?

BAM: And where.

BEM: Is that all?

BAM: Yes.

BEM: Then stop?

BAM: Yes. Come.

[BAM exits at W followed by BEM.]

V: Good.

It is winter.

Time passes.

In the end I appear.

Reappear.

[BAM enters at W, halts at 3 head bowed.]

V: Good.

I am alone.

In the present as were I still.

It is winter.

Without journey.

Time passes.

That is all.

Make sense who may.

I switch off.

[Light off P.

Pause.

Light off V.]

